

~~88-55~~ H 7 = 41





~~88-55~~ H 7 = 41





012635 d II

2 Vols. -  
part 1  
Coulter

(K1)

THE  
ADVENTURES

*Mary* OF *Lloyd* 1750

Mr. LOVEILL,

Interpers'd with many

REAL AMOURS

OF THE

Modern Polite World.

---

VOL. I.

---



---

LONDON:

Printed for M. COOPER, at the *Globe* in  
*Pater-noster Row*. M.DCC.L.



ADVANCE

THE

PREFACE

Advances in the science of medicine have been made in the last few years, which have not only increased our knowledge of the human body, but have also improved our methods of treatment. The progress of medicine is now so rapid, that it is difficult to keep abreast of the latest discoveries. The purpose of this book is to give a summary of the most important advances in the science of medicine, and to show how they have been applied in practice. The book is divided into two parts. The first part deals with the general principles of medicine, and the second part deals with the treatment of specific diseases. The book is written in a simple and clear style, and is intended for the use of students and practitioners of medicine.





THE  
P R E F A C E.

*A* Motive extremely different from that of the whole race of modern writers of Memoirs, from the author of TOM JONES, down to the gentleman who has lately favoured us with the History of Charlotte Summers, has influenced the drawing up of these. Those celebrated performances have all been written from the same source, the summons of the vacant pocket; these from the overflowings of an honest, and an injured heart. Far be it from me to imagine they will excel for this reason: I plead it in excuse. Where interest, where an ambition for future fame, or, in other words, for future employment, are among the writer's motives in a piece of this kind, they will be guards upon every step he advances, eternal monitors against inaccuracies and errors, and are, perhaps, the best concomitants a good genius in this way can be assisted by.

Here, where the heart only speaks; where interest is beneath regard; and where fame,

## iv      The PREFACE.

*incompatible with obscurity, remains, even though it could be desired, impracticable; what has the reader to expect but an artless tale; perhaps indeed a feeling one: a story addressed rather to the heart than to the imagination; and which has only this peculiarity to boast of, that, so far at least as it concerns the writer, it is built not on the roivings of a luxuriant fancy, but on real occurrences.*

*Were it easy for people to speak properly of their own affairs, there is nothing the compiler of these memoirs wou'd so earnestly wish, as to introduce them to the world by saying something of herself. Start not, gentle reader, at the notice that it is a female hand that writes them. Secure in an inviolable secrecy from all farther enquiries, I do confess myself a woman; an innocent, an interested, and an injured woman: and after this, I leave it to your discernment, to find out which of the female characters I have drawn is my own.*

*If a thorough knowledge of one's subject be a requisite of consequence to the writing well upon it, (which is indeed a point some late celebrated works seem to leave disputable) I may very fairly boast that qualification at least, since I have assuredly as perfect an acquaintance with the person who is the principal character in this treatise, as any author can ever have had with his hero, provided only that he*  
*did*

## The PREFACE. v

*did not write about himself. If I thought it possible I could be known, I should explain away the seeming criminal sense in which this declaration may be taken by ill-natur'd people; but as that cannot be, let it suffice that I declare myself innocent; and as I have no interest in the assertion, let me be believed.*

*The hero of this history is too remarkable a man not to be known in a much less perfect picture than I have given of him. If his character appears in some places heightened, either in the good or the ill, let it be considered, that 'tis a woman who writes; a no where disinterested, and in many cases an angry woman.*

*As to the other personages of our drama, it remains to acknowledge, that beside Mr. Loveill's and my own, there are some real ones. Let not this concession however be carried so far as to be understood of all: nor let the malicious world apply what we have said of fancy'd people, to real ones.*

*There is perhaps no character ever so imaginary, that has not some resemblance in one part or other of it, to something really existing; but if the unfair severity of a reader chuses to carry on the likeness, and to affix every particularity of a bad character here, upon every one of his acquaintance to whom some single stroke in it may be applicable, be*



vi      The PREFACE.

*it remembered that I clear myself of the aspersion ; that the scandal lies solely in him who applies it ; and that it has been long since observed by a very great genius, that a country squire may be able to make the whole Duty of Man a personal libel, by writing the names of his drunken and profane neighbours in the margin, where the vices they are addicted to are treated of.*

*The genuine intent of these memoirs is not to give unmerited censure, nor prostituted praise : All that I have aimed at is, to inform the succeeding race of lovers, that vice is folly ; and to guard the rest of my own sex from misfortunes, which innocence itself, though it is the greatest of all consolations under, is no defence against. If in the series of events that have been recorded occasionally in the course of a history dedicated to this honest purpose, some characters are hung up in terrorem, and some others exhibited as patterns of virtue and honour to the world, we beg it may be understood, that they are pictured here not in friendship, or in enmity to the particular persons, but for the public good ; as examples and as warnings to ten thousand people, who seem at present sufficiently to want them.*

THE

---

---

# THE CONTENTS.

**T**HE INTRODUCTION; containing  
*some account of the plan, and intent of  
the work.* pag. i.

## CHAP. I.

*The history of Lady Juliet Scheme. An ad-  
venture on the road.—A short charatler  
of Beau Narcissus.—Lady Juliet arrives  
at Bath.* p. 5.

## CHAP. II.

*Bath amours.—Lady Juliet besieged by Lord  
Tawdry—is relieved by Sir Solomon Sin-  
gle.—An obstinate dispute on the qualifi-  
cations of that memorable knight.* p. 16.

†

CHAP.

viii CONTENTS.

CHAP. III.

*Character of Miss Busy.—A specimen of a female friendship.—The knight loses his conquest by a very remarkable discovery.*  
P. 32.

CHAP. IV.

*A three days eclipse of Lady Juliet.—Various conquests of the female world in that time. Captain Taste recovers from an indisposition.—History of the unfortunate Miss Patty Hastive.—A second plot of Miss Busy against Lady Juliet.*  
P. 43.

CHAP. V.

*Period of the amour of Miss Hastive.—A council of war called by Miss Busy's party—breaks up without coming to any resolution.—A total defeat in the pump-room.—The captain's amour with Lady Juliet goes on very successfully.* p. 67.

CHAP. VI.

*A stranger arrives at Bath.—An unlucky accident is like to create a jealousy between Captain Taste and Lady Juliet.—Advances made towards a new amour, which proceed very slowly.* P. 76.

CHAP.

# CONTENTS. ix

## CHAP. VII.

*Loveill with great precaution courts Lady Juliet.—An occasional criticism on the English poets, who write words for music.*  
P. 85.

## CHAP. VIII.

*A conversation between Mr. Loveill and Lady Juliet.—Captain Taste attacks her in a new suit.—Matters fluctuate between him and Loveill a long time.—Victory at length declares herself in favour of the greater beau.*  
P. 94.

## CHAP. IX.

*Captain Taste takes his final leave of Lady Juliet.—Mr. Loveill and she come to an explanation.—A new character interrupts the whole business.*  
P. 107.

## CHAP. X.

*The history of Mr. Dupy.—A memorable trial at Rome, in consequence of which that gentleman sets sail for England.*  
P. 120.

## CHAP. XI.

*Mr. Dupy becomes acquainted with Lady Juliet.—A party at Lincom Spaw.*  
P. 134.

CHAP.



## **\* CONTENTS.**

### **C H A P. XII.**

*Character of Mrs. Meanwell.—Lady Juliet vindicated in a seeming very black scene.—Loveill returns to Bath.* P. 150.

### **C H A P. XIII.**

*Lady Juliet gains a set of new friends. She relates to them the whole story of Loveill.* P. 155.

### **C H A P. XIV.**

*Mrs. Meanwell informs her friend of the birth and circumstances of her lover.* P. 158.

### **C H A P. XV.**

*History of Sir Gripe Loveill;—a strange turn in the affairs of the hero of our story.—* P. 165.

### **C H A P. XVI.**

*Loveill enters himself at one of the universities.—Visits London.—An affair between him and the celebrated Mrs. W——.* P. 176.

### **C H A P.**

# CONTENTS. xi

## CHAP. XVII.

*Character of Mr. Sneer.—An attack upon Loveill in the bantering strain, finely conducted, but not very successful. p. 188.*

## CHAP. XVIII.

*A very remarkable occurrence explained.—Loveill gets the better of all his antagonists, and returns the behaviour of Mrs. W—— as it deserves. p. 210.*

## CHAP. XIX.

*Loveill arrives in London.—Picks up a mistress at Putney bowling-green.—A very cunning scheme disconcerted. p. 214.*

## CHAP. XX.

*Loveill attacks the celebrated Cynthia at Ranelagh.—A sham courtship of a duenna. p. 230.*

## CHAP. XXI.

*The history of Mrs. Nothing, as delivered from her most intimate friend. p. 253.*

## CHAP. XXII.

*Mr. Nothing is informed of Loveill's visits in his family.—He makes him a very handsome offer.*

xii      C O N T E N T S.

*offer.—Cynthia's attachment to him is discovered by Miss Sulky.*      P. 274.

C H A P. XXIII.

*Miss Sulky determines the ruin of Loveill with Cynthia.—That gentleman meets Lady Bett at Ranelagh.—His company much displeased at his behaviour.*      P. 287.

C H A P. XXIV.

*History of Sir Gerrard Bett.—Loveill gets into a terrible scrape.*      P. 309.

C H A P. XXV.

*Sir Gerrard behaves oddly on meeting Loveill in his house.—That gentleman finds means to get safe off.*      P. 317.

C H A P. XXVI.

*Loveill makes up a breach with Cynthia.—Mr. Nothing arrives in town.—A plot upon him succeeds to admiration.*      P. 322.

T H E

THE  
ADVENTURES  
OF  
Mr. LOVEILL.

---

THE INTRODUCTION.

*Containing some account of the plan, and  
intent of the Work.*

THERE are a number of story-tellers in the world, who, out of their excess of good nature, can never content themselves with delivering the necessary incidents of the relation they favour us with. They will be sure to connect with it a thousand impertinent circumstances, either by way of embellishment, or of historical accuracy, under the load of which the patience of the hearer is wearied.



ried out, his attention pall'd, and the body of the story so obscured by the cloud of attendant episodes, that its real beauties, if it have any, hardly make any sensible impression.

Somewhat of the same kind seems also to have been the fault of many of the modern writers of memoirs; who, though they have often had very good materials to work upon, in part of the life of the hero whom they have chosen for their subject; yet have so blended the essential actions with idle and unaffecting incidents, or so swell'd them with unnecessary circumstances, that the gentle reader has in many cases not been able to separate the grain of corn from the bushel of chaff; but the whole has been thrown away together.

The most unlucky of all the errors that the writers in this way are apt to fall into, is that of ushering into the world a short and interesting story, with a long and lifeless introduction; by prefixing, with a scrupulous exactness, to the history of the statesman, or the lover, that of the baby, and the school-boy: as if they thought the reader had an equal right to the knowledge of every period and circumstance of the hero's life, whether any thing to the purpose or not; and esteemed themselves under the same injunctions as at the bar of

a court of judicature, where their consciences require it of them to deliver the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth.

'Tis evident indeed from example, that there is a way of interesting the reader in the very earliest periods of the life of the future hero of the story; nay, and of making even things preceding those, not only accessory, but in some sort essential and necessary to the succeeding history; but it does not appear, that every writer of this kind can be the father of a *foundling*. The author of these memoirs determines to avoid the rock on which so many of his predecessors have split: and without informing the reader of such important circumstances, as that the person whose history is to be related was born, or went to school; or acquainting him with the prophetic spirit of a mother, during her pregnancy, dreaming that she was delivered of a billet doux; will content himself with relating every thing that is worth hearing about him, or that has any immediate relation to the scenes of action represented in that part of his life, which is the proper subject of the work.

The intent of these memoirs is to inculcate a necessary caution both in the male and female world, in that important part of life in which love and marriage are the

#### 4      The ADVENTURES of

principal objects of the thoughts. As this will be attempted in the way of example, by the history of a man of address, engaged in amours of every kind; the hero will be introduced upon the stage in his twenty-fourth year; the action will be finished within his twenty-fifth; and the reader will be left to judge, from his own reason, and to collect from what hints are occasionally given by one or other of the parties concerned in the relation, that he existed both before and after the time of this short period.

As it is not the natural life, but the life of gallantry of Mr. Loveill that is to be the subject of this history, his proper birth with us, is to be dated from his first appearance among the polite world; and his death from his marriage; which happened nearly at the distance of a year from that time. It being the sense of the author, that the *death to gallantry*, which every honest man submits himself to when he marries, is to all intents and purposes as absolute and cogent, and is at least as irrevocable, as the civil death to which a man in the Roman catholic countries is devoted by taking the vows, or an outlaw'd delinquent in our own.

After these premonitions to the reader, we shall launch out at once into the scenes  
of

of gallantry our hero has been engaged in, and leave it to chance to inform him of what preceded them.

## C H A P. I.

*The history of Lady Juliet Scheme. An adventure on the road — A short character of Beau Narcissus. — Lady Juliet arrives at Bath.*

THE people who frequent Bath, cannot but remember that for a great part of the last winter, the gay and gallant lady Juliet Scheme was general passion there. 'Tis always the custom, at that gay place, to admire some beauty for the season; and 'tis paying Lady Juliet a compliment, which she honestly deserves, though at the expence of the whole sex, to acknowledge that this was the first instance in which the general passion was ever justly grounded.

'Tis in general a very unreasonable injunction, upon the various tempers of men, to compel a multitude of them to admire the same face, and this on no less penalty than that of being laugh'd out of countenance. But here a lady claimed the general adoration, in whom the raptures of



## 6 The ADVENTURES of

of a lover were not necessary to see irresistible charms; whom the cool and disinterested historian confesses to possess every several perfection, every amiable quality of the sex. It could therefore be no great violence offered to the thoughts of every man capable of admiring a woman at all, to expect him to adore in her, that particular beauty, which he had before established as the great object of love; and which, (be it what it would,) he was sure to find in her more amiable than in any other.

Lady Juliet was at this time in the perfect bloom of life; young, but not girlish; and tho' a widow, yet scarce a woman. She was barely nineteen: in the utmost pride of health, and gaiety of disposition. She was the widow of a young old man, who had marry'd her about two years before in the violence of a passion, which his early debaucheries had rendered it impossible for him to pall; and who in consequence of this had continued, to his death, a fond and ardent lover; and made the whole period of their marriage one continued scene of courtship.

The virgin widow's love of singularity, and high relish for admiration on whatever account, had instructed her in means to divulge this secret history; and there was  
not

not an hour passed at the publick times of the day, in which she had not twenty occasions given her to put on the pettiest blush in the world at the remembrance of it.

She had been sufficiently informed of the charms of her person, by the train of adoring suitors who had paid their luckless addresses to her while she was married. Nature had given her perhaps the best face she had ever bestowed on any body; but even this could not satisfy the ambition its owner had for absolute perfection: art had been called in to give it some finishing touches, but as very little assistance could be received from this resource, and that was conducted with a judgment that few other women have had to boast of, it gave a concealed grace that every one admired, tho' no body ever suspected its origin.

A face thus perfect was not the whole of Lady Juliet's external charms: she was tall without being aukward, and had a shape, that the envy of a whole provoked sex had not been able to point out a blemish in. With these charms of person, nature had given her an excellent understanding, and every means of improving it had been abundantly bestowed on her in her earlier years; so that no woman upon the whole, was ever so well cut out for admiration.

This, gentle reader is a sort of miracle which an author of any degree of prudence, who had lived a century or two after the lady, would not, perhaps, have ventured to relate; but as we write but of things of yesterday, we need not fear to deliver a truth, of which so many sensible impressions yet remain in the hearts of the present beau monde. The only blemishes in this amiable character were an unbounded pride, an insolence in her charms; an insatiable desire of making conquests; and a too high opinion of her own understanding. The last of these she had flattered herself into from the success of certain schemes that had terminated very happily for her; and though that in reality had been more the effect of her eyes than her cunning, she fully persuaded herself from it, that she had subtilty and intrigue enough to make every thing possible to her.

The short period of this lady's married state had been spent in a life of splendour and magnificence: but as the young people, who make a figure in the world at present, are not over famous for œconomy, it happened, that when the gay husband died, his whole effects amounted to no more than bare four thousand pounds.

A lady of the enterprizing genius of our heroine, it may be easily supposed, could  
not

not think of stinting herself to the paltry income that the interest of this scanty fortune would allow her. She was inconsolable for her loss: She immured herself from the sight of the world four whole days. This time she devoted to the determining what should be her future road of life. A thousand different schemes presented themselves to her imagination all equally agreeable, and all perfectly suitable to every circumstance of her affairs except her fortune. At length she brought the whole to this result: that as she was handsome, she should be soon courted; and that as she intended to marry again, as soon as she decently and conveniently could, it was but of little consequence to her what she did in the mean time: that as the rank and quality of her lovers would be determined by the figure she made in the world, it was her interest to make the best she could: and that as her fortune was four thousand pounds, and setting matters at the very worst, she could not think of allowing more than four years for her marrying again, she might prudently and without extravagance spend a thousand pounds a year.

This important consideration being fixed, the disconsolate widow settled the œconomy of her family, ordered her chair for her town visits, and her Phaeton for the



10      The ADVENTURES of

country; and at the end of about a week more, burst forth at once into the world again in full glory. The late Lord's affairs were a secret to every body, and people had too good an opinion of the lady's understanding to suspect her of extravagance; so that she passed for a ten, twenty, thirty, nay, with some for a forty thousand pound fortune.

Lady Juliet was not a little pleased with this prepossession of the world in her favour. She was sensible enough of her own charms to know, that with the reputation of such a fortune, she could not but have offers from the first people of the kingdom; and she had opinion enough of her favourite cunning, to depend upon herself for negotiating the matter of a marriage, in spite of the disappointment which the knowledge of the true state of her affairs must bring on.

It happened, that this lady had become a widow in the month of September, a time of the year when London could afford her but a small number of lovers to chuse out of. She soon recollected that it was Bath which had made London empty: She determined to make that gay place the scene of her victories; and after exercising her chairmen two days, in visiting the few people of fashion left in this dis-

consolate

consolate place; she mounted her Phaeton, attended by her woman, and four footmen, and made towards the destin'd rendezvous as fast as her horses could carry her.

The fashionable part of the modern female world have found, among the thousand inconveniences of that habit which an odious custom has imposed a necessity on them of appearing in, that it is of all others the least calculated for travelling. Our heroine, who never was second to any of her sister *belles*, in leaving the characters of her sex behind her, had accordingly equipped herself for this journey in a habit in the highest taste; and which, if it had carried a little more of the appearance of the woman about it, might have given a proper fashion for the law of nations to impose upon Hermaphrodites.

People on the Bath-road are too much used to the sight of persons of fashion, to think any thing strange that a fine lady can appear in; So that the virile habit of our heroine escaped any particular censure on the road, or at the inns. She had driven on her horses at so brisk a rate for a great part of two days, that when the end of their journey appeared in sight, they were almost too tired to give her a possibility of arriving at it. She grew mad with impatience, but happily for her, the habit which  
hitherto

## 12      The ADVENTURES of

hitherto she had found no great effects from, now led her into an adventure which proved of infinite consequence to her ; not only in carrying her more speedily to the scene of action, but in alarming every body there, and preparing them for her reception.

It should have been observed, that some hours before the adventure we are about to celebrate, the compassionate lady, partly in kindness to her horses, and partly to her own impatience, had lightened their load by dismissing her attendant into a stage coach. She now fill'd the vehicle alone ; and was lashing the jaded creatures to very little purpose, when she saw approaching in a direct line towards her a splended equipage of the same kind with her own, drawn by horses in somewhat better spirits, and fill'd with a beau of the first magnitude.

The hero, who in this gallant manner approached the lady, was no other than the most famous and renowned Narcissus ; who was that evening taking a short airing, with the two important views of shewing his new equipage, and giving a brilliance to his complexion, before he dressed for the rooms. If Beau Narcissus, was not a character too notorious to need a description, we should add to the common observation,

vation, of his being the gayest, idlest, emptiest thing of the age, and to his being the only creature on the earth that admires his pretty self; some other characteristicks which on this occasion may be spared.

The beau, who did not care to dirt his horses feet, by turning them out of the track, drove up to the face of those in the opposite machine, not a little astonished at the incivility of the driver, who could see the delicacy of his whole equipage, and not turn her own dirty wheels out of the way for it. The horses met: those of the beau's equipage exerted their throats and paws with some vehemence and vociferation: the lady's pair, though they had not quite so much spirit; had, however, by far too much weariness to go out of the way; and the beau depending on his imaginary consequence, and the lady on the privilege of her sex, both seemed determined not to give up the victory.

The smug face, the silk coat, and the hat and feather of his antagonist, had fully persuaded Narcissus, that she was such another creature as himself; and as the leather of her chaise was up, and from the knees upwards every thing in her habit had the character of the male sex, we are not to wonder that a person of his sagacity had not



## 14      The ADVENTURES of

not penetration enough to discover, that the wearer was of the female kind.

Thus much 'tis necessary to premise in excuse of the beau, who every body knows would rather offend any thing than a woman; except it were a man: and who fired at the contempt that was offered him, and thinking he read too much of the milk-sop in the face of his adversary, to leave him the least ground for fear, very heroically ventured his neck by a sudden leap from the machine; and laying his lilly hand upon his peaceful sword, called his antagonist down, and demanded immediate satisfaction. A lady of our heroine's stamp, could not but enjoy a blunder of this kind in its utmost spirit; and at this instant testifying her satisfaction in it by a loud laugh, the violence of her emotion broke the strap of the leather of her chaise, which falling down, discovered the lower part of a female habit, and convinced the mistaken knight-errant of his error, before she could find breath to tell him, *he had given a testimony of his courage, which she hoped would never be forgotten.*

If histories say true, it was on this occasion that for the first time Narcissus blushed. As soon as he was recovered from his confusion, his anger was turned into adoration; he said all the fine things that a fool

fool could say upon such an occasion; and at length discovering the jaded condition of the lady's horses, he pressed her to exchange vehicles, and drive herself to the end of her journey in his equipage, while he took upon himself the care of getting back in hers. The lady finished her journey, by this means, more agreeably than she had expected: and the beau, tho' he was detained two hours from the rooms by the exchange, could not find in his heart to be sorry for that long eclipse, when he considered the occasion of it.

It has been observed among the men, that nothing makes two people such inseparable friends as a duel, in which neither of them has got any hurt. The shadow of an engagement of that kind in this late adventure had inspired the valiant Narcissus with as warm a friendship for the person he had challeng'd, as ever the reality had done the greatest coward in the world on a like occasion: he could not but consider his reputation for courage as established for ever by it; for he flattered himself no body would ever suppose, that he challenged a woman knowing her to be so.

The joy of this imaginary honour sat so strongly impressed upon his face at his entering the rooms, that his whole crowd of humble friends gathered about him to ask  
the

the occasion; and as his noble thoughts on love affairs had never before soar'd, above a milliner's prentice, a butter girl, or an oyster wench, the pride of his heart, on the imaginary conquest of a woman of fashion, could not be restrained; he told the story aloud, and added so many extatic encomiums on the beauty, wit, and spirit of the lady, that the whole assembly seem'd to catch his flame, and waited with the utmost impatience her appearance among them.

## C H A P. II.

*Bath amours.—Lady Juliet besieged by Lord Tawdry—is relieved by Sir Solomon Single.—An obstinate dispute on the qualifications of that memorable knight.*

**T**WO days passed in the most eager expectation of this beauty's appearance. Narcissus had not been wise enough to enquire her name of the servant who delivered him back his equipage, so that he could add nothing to his first account of her. The beaux were not more fir'd with admiration, from the description he had given

given of her charms, than the belles with envy: and it would not be easy to say, among the gay crowd that then honoured the place, whether more breasts expected, the pleasure of seeing the so much celebrated beauty; or that of finding faults in her, and of laughing at the beau for his want of judgment.

On the third evening the new miracle came forth among them. The lady had indeed been prepared for making her appearance the whole day, and might even have shewed herself in the morning at the pump-room; but as she had too much cunning to miss any advantage that she could be seen under, and knew full well the assistances the fairest face receives from dress and candle-light, she deferred her public entry till the time of the evening assembly at the rooms. The pride of surprizing and putting five hundred people into confusion kept her back even then, in spite of all her eagerness to shew herself, till she concluded the company were all got together, and seated at cards; or formed into serious parties. At this well determined juncture she entered among them in all the blaze and majesty of beauty, heightened by every ornament, art could devise for it. The men who were nearest her, were dumb with astonishment; somebody however buzz'd



it about, that Narcissus's beauty was come: the whisper soon reached the extent of the room; and the whole company rose to her.

The women, who had got up with the expecting joy of finding faults in her; saw it was Lady Juliet, and sat down again. The men forgot their cards, and not a few of them broke away from their parties to be nearer her: every body was sensible enough, that this was the angelic form they had been made to expect among them; only the beau who had described her to them did not know her again.

Nash soon saw the cause of the disorder the whole assembly was thrown into; but all his art proved ineffectual to bring people to rule again, till the fair cause of it, when she had taken in her fill of adoration, left people to come to themselves, by setting herself down at one of the card-tables.

The remainder of the evening was spent in admiration and whispers. Every one was sensible that Lady Juliet was a widow; but no body knew any thing of her circumstances. We are always ready to believe things to be as we wish they were: the men with one voice gave her out to be an immense fortune, whilst the utmost malice of the other sex could only rise to a suspicion, that *perhaps every thing might*  
not

*not be gold that glittered.* No body left the room while Lady Juliet was willing to stay in it; but toward eleven, when by some signal it was discovered that she had thoughts of going, there was a general overturning of chairs and tables to get up to her to take a last look; and *Captain Blade* and *Beau Dimple* had certainly carried matters as far as a challenge, about the honour of handing her to her chair; had not the latter prudently considered, that as he intended himself the happiness of passing his life with her, it would be very absurd in him to throw away that life in the attempting it.

The situation of a woman's heart fond of admiration to that excess that Lady Juliet's was, may easily be conceived after the success of such an evening. As soon as she arrived at her lodgings, she threw herself upon a couch, and in all the flutter and inquietude of a person over-powered with an abundance of good fortune; she recounted, (while her woman undressed her) the several conquests she had reason to think she had made. In the midst of all this confusion of success she had art enough about her, however, to remember that it was not her business to be in love; but to marry prudently: and in consequence of this she entered upon a most unalterable resolution,

resolution, to give no immediate preference to any one of the lovers, but to enquire into the state of every ones affairs, before she suffered herself to think of his person.

Her heart was too full to leave her any appetite to supper ; and though she went fatigued enough to bed, her imagination was too much employed on the glorious scene before her, to give place readily to sleep. She toss'd about in vain for half an hour ; and then ordering her woman to bring her the old poet, who tells the story of the Trojan war, in which so many princes and heroes were cut to pieces for the sake of Helen ; she read herself to sleep over that part where the author artfully introduces the highest compliment to that beauty that ever was given to a woman, in telling us, that when she came among the assembly of the venerable sages who were consulting means for the safety of that devoted city, they rose up at her appearance, and declared her a worthy cause for all that had been done and suffered about her.

After such dreams of splendor, love and adoration, as vanity and success may be easily be supposed to have inspired, in consequence of the thoughts this happy fair one lay down with ; fortune seemed to have provided her the only proper waking amusement.

usement. Her eyes were not well opened before they were cast on her toilet, the top of which was decorated, since the last night with as many letters as might be expected at the levee of a secretary of state; and these with superscriptions as various as the hands they were wrote in. Among the first parcel she cast her eye upon, she saw one *to the fair unknown*, another to the *modern Venus*, a third *to the brightest star in the firmament of Bath*; but among the variety of these, some of which it was easy to see came from fools, others from poets, and most of the rest from people of about as much consequence; her eye was struck with one directed to *the charming Juliet*: this had given her a longer satisfaction, had not she seen under it a card carelessly folded up, and directed in form to *the Lady Juliet Scheme*.

The greater part of these letters contained protestations of love from people who were too much enamour'd to write English; and sighs from beaux who could not spell: together with poems out of number; but which being neither good enough to like, nor bad enough to laugh at, can have no place here. The only pieces that deserved the lady's notice were the two last; the former of them was a sensible and tender offer of a sincere passion, from Sir Solomon  
Single,



Single, a sober gentleman, of a very considerable fortune ; and the latter a message from Lord Tawdry, to tell the lady he had ordered a breakfast, at which he hoped she would do him the honour of pre-fiding.

Lady Juliet had a sufficient sense of gratitude to know, that she was obliged to every man who did her the honour to admire her ; and that she owed at least a decent civility and respect to the author of every one of these billets, excepting only such as were influenced wholly by her supposed fortune, and paid her understanding the affront of supposing they could run away with her.

The company at breakfast appeared very brilliant in their undresses, and the good natured disposition we have just describ'd in our heroine, gave her a circle of friends and acquaintance, that made up little less than the whole assembly. Every one paid his court to her ; the author of two or three of the lamentable ditties she had received in the morning, did themselves the justice of making themselves known to her as such ; the gallant Mr. *Gentle* repeated to her every fine thing he had been for these twenty years saying to the aunts and mothers of our present race of beauties, as well as to themselves ; and the master

ster of the entertainment shone more than ordinarily in that species of wit, as some have miscalled it, that takes his *title* for its appellation.

Had not some of the gallant speeches of this noble suitor been too gross for the ears of any thing above a common prostitute, his quality and figure would certainly have made some impresson on the lady : nay, the woman was at length prevailing apace in her, while he was polluting her snowy neck with his fragrant sighs, under the pretence of a whisper ; when at the lucky instant for her delivery, the tender *Sir Solomon* enter'd the room.

There was something in the delicacy, and softness of expression in that gentleman's letter, which had I know not how interested her heart strangely in his favour ; and the natural comparison of the elegance of this, with the indecent and fulsome ribaldry she had just been entertained with, from the noble lord at her elbow, offer'd itself in so favourable a light, that she was struck at once. The tawdry lover lost all the ground he had gained in an instant : and the enamour'd fair observing that *Sir Solomon's* fears kept him at a distance, broke through the ranks, and made up towards him. *Sir Solomon* was a person of that invincible modesty, that he only  
received

received her with a blush; and with much ado, after a pause of five minutes, told her that he thought it was a very warm morning.

A woman is always pleased, when she finds her lover over cautious of giving offence: and as it is also the universal custom of the sex to construe every thing into the sense most favourable to themselves, the happy Lady Juliet was perfectly satisfy'd that the violence of this gentleman's passion was the only thing that kept him from well expressing it: and was not a little pleased to find that the awe her presence inspired was so great as to confound one of the brightest genius's she had met with.

Full of the pride of this imaginary homage, she cast off her whole crowd of lovers with a look of the utmost contempt, and while they were all burning with envy at the fortune of the happy favourite, opened a conversation (not to say a courtship,) in the most engaging manner imaginable, by telling him, that she was to thank him for a letter she had the honour to receive from him that morning: and which, she added, was by much the politest and most elegant thing of the kind that she had met with.

The lover only answered her with a bow, accompanied with a smile that expressed  
great

great satisfaction ; and the lady who interpreted this silence into the same awful respect with the former, after some little pause, was pleased to continue the conversation in this manner : ‘ The free way in which I have expressed my sense of your address, may convince you, Sir Solomon, that I have it not in my thoughts to interest my own sentiments in it. — I have lost too valuable a husband already, to leave me the least prospect of happiness with another ; — but, continued she (the little confusion which this recollection occasioned in her being over) ‘ never question your success in any other attempt of this kind. — Pay your vows to some happier woman ; and take this from me, wherever any man can succeed, the author of the letter you have honoured me with, will not fail.’ The eyes of the company were so strongly bent upon the lady, during this little scene of courtship, that she found it impossible to continue it any longer ; and taking her leave of the knight with a low curt’sy, she had the modesty to know it was not her business to stay any longer in a place, where the whole company was a knot of incens’d rivals ; but returning her thanks to Lord Tawdry in a cool compliment, she tripp’d it out of the room.



The two or three hours that passed between this time and dinner were not spent in less tumult and confusion in the lady's thoughts, than those of the night before. She had informed herself well enough of the sober knight's fortune, to know that he was by far the most proper person in the place, in that respect, for her to think of as a husband : she congratulated herself twenty times in an hour on the happiness, of meeting with a man of so much delicacy, sense, and taste, who was at the same time so advantageous an offer in that grand point ; and though she had some struggles about giving herself up at first sight ; and yet more about parting with such a train of lovers as she saw herself at present at the head of, and among whom Mr. Dimple had looked some things that made no little impression ; yet she at length determined Sir Solomon the happy man. His person, though rather what we would call a good than an elegant one, pleas'd her the better the more she thought of it : his taciturnity was a merit in him, as she was fully persuaded it wholly arose from love ; and she was even brought by her ruling passion to think, that his sober gravity had something in it not less pleasing, than that opposite quality of gallantry which she had  
always

always before been so highly enamour'd with.

We are not to wonder that a fine lady in love cou'd eat no dinner. After the ceremony of a meal, however, she was not a little pleased with receiving two letters; the one in a blunt but honest stile, from the conquer'd Lord Tawdry, to tell her, (with the sanction of an oath) that tho' it was not the custom of his family to marry, and though he had in particular always resolved against it himself, yet if she pleased he would marry her instantly, and make her as good a husband as he could. The other was from Sir Solomon, in all the elegance of language, lamenting the severity of her sentence in the morning, and begging permission to be heard against it that afternoon.

We are not so far to extol this Lady's constancy at the expence of truth, as to conceal that these two letters occasioned some debate in her mind. There was an honest simplicity in the first, that a woman of her judgment could not but perceive there was something very charming in: but though it cost her some tears to come to the resolution; the noble lord's proposal was deliver'd to the Frenchman, who was at this time waiting, to curl her hair; and a card was dispatched to Sir Solomon, to

28      The ADVENTURES of

tell him the lady would be very glad of his company.

Lady Juliet was scarce prepared to receive a visit when the knight, the ardor of whose passion was not a little heightened by the apparent envy of his numerous rivals, enter'd the room. The terrors of an immediate compliance, which the lady had persuaded herself it was her business not to refuse, if the gallant should be pleased to press her to it, kept her in a confusion that prevented her speaking; and another cause operating not less strongly upon the knight, the first moments of this interview, from which so much was expected on both sides, pass'd in a profound silence.

At length the oracle was beginning to disclose itself at the lover's mouth, when a furious thundering at the door drove all the blood out of his cheeks, with the terror it inspired him with of the appearance of some formidable rival.

The lover's fears were soon dissipated, on his perceiving, from the rustling of silks, that something in petticoats was entering; but what was the vexation and uneasiness of the lady, to find that this impertinent visitor was no other than *Miss Busy*; one of those idle people of fashion, who, as they don't know what to do with  
their

their own time, will not permit any body else to enjoy theirs.

When the first confusion was a little over, Lady Juliet fell into a tolerably free conversation with her visiter; and as they had both a keen turn to raillery, some very good-natured things were said of most of the people who made a figure in the place. The ladies seemed very happy in the conversation, but the lover, who was not cut out by nature to make a figure in such company, after an hour's obstinate silence, in spite of a thousand of the most favourable overtures from Lady Juliet, took his leave.

The Lady waited on him, with great complaisance, to the door, and told him, she hoped she should have the pleasure of seeing him again very soon. She was answered with a blush and a low bow; and with a soft whisper of, *Madam, your very humble servant.*

The door was scarce shut after him, when the visiter scream'd out an exclamation against the brute; and entreated dear Lady Juliet to tell her how she came to have that dismal devil along with her. Lady Juliet blush'd; she said she could not but own, he had made but an ill figure that afternoon; but continued she, I see you don't know that gen-



tleman: you little imagine that under all that modesty and diffidence you see about him, he has the best genius, and the greatest delicacy of sentiment and expression, of any man of the age.

It would not be easy to do justice to the expressions of astonishment, with which Miss Busy received this encomium of a man whom she could not persuade herself but that she knew at least, as well as her friend, tho' she thought very differently about him. Unconquerable obstinacy is generally the attendant of an opinion of superiour judgment in the fair sex, and both our ladies possessing these several qualities, in no inferior degree, it was not easy for them to agree in their opinions of a man of whom each thought she had very sufficient reason to think so oppositely to the other.

Miss Busy, from her longer acquaintance with the subject of their dispute, had a thousand ridiculous stories to tell of his adventures; and in fine press'd her advantage so far as to insist upon it to her friend, that he had never even spoke three sensible words to her in his life. The mortified and provoked Lady Juliet after some pause answered, that she found she was reduced to the necessity of giving her, what, indeed was a very improper proof to be exposed,

posed, but what she thought she so indispensibly owed to the gentleman's merit, that she had no right to conceal it; and with some considerable mixture of triumph and confusion in her countenance, took out of her bosom the two letters she had received from him, and delivered them under the seal of secrecy to her antagonist.

Miss Busy expressed a sort of pleasure, by a malicious smile in her countenance, while she was reading them, which Lady Juliet was so impatient to understand the meaning of; that she could scarce suppress her curiosity, till she had finished the last.

To all the pride and conscious triumph with which she then asked her, what is your opinion of this gentleman now? the Lady would not be prevailed upon to return any other answer, than that they must wave the dispute for that time; but that the next morning should determine, in an unanswerable manner, which of them was mistaken.

All the entreaties of Lady Juliet, could not alter her invariable resolution on this occasion, or prevail with her to engage any farther in the dispute at that time. The rest of the evening till the hour for going to the rooms, passed in conversations on other subjects; and Lady Juliet when she reflected on her pillow, on all the circum-

stances of their contest, soon satisfy'd herself, that she had gained an absolute, tho' not an acknowledged, victory; and resolved the malicious evasion of her friend, in the resolution of waving the dispute till a pretended future opportunity, into the common pride of her sex, which she very well knew, though it might be made sensible enough that it was fairly conquered, would never be made humble enough to own it.

### C H A P. III.

*Character of Miss Busy.—A Specimen of a female friendship.—The knight loses his conquest by a very remarkable discovery.*

THE dear friend of our heroine, whom we have had occasion to mention in the preceding chapter, was one of those ladies to whom the courtesy of England allows the title of *Miss* to be continued long after their having passed the period of life to which it properly belongs. The malicious world, though she could not possibly be persuaded to allow herself more than three and twenty, would not be prevailed



vailed with to forget that she had been within a fortnight of being married almost twenty years before.

A disappointment that sat heavy upon her at that time, had made her conceive an aversion for the whole sex; and this, with some other trifling reasons, had prevented her from engaging in any matrimonial scheme afterwards.

She was a lady of no very amiable person: nature, or the intended menders of nature, had given her an unlucky twist in her infancy, which had grown up with her; and her frequent dissatisfied looks towards that side of her body which was most prominent, had given all the features of her face a tendency the same way, and fixed a downward cast in her eyes, and a lowering displeasure in the whole frame of her face, which appeared somewhat opposite to that smiling openness of countenance that is so apt to prejudice us in favour of people at first sight.

Whatever nature had deny'd this lady in her person, she had amply however made up to her in her understanding, which if it had not been debauched by excessive adulations in her younger time of life, and affronted and exasperated afterwards by a neglect owing wholly to the unlucky form it was coupled with, would have been capa-



### 34      The ADVENTURES of

ble of all things. Under these discouraging circumstances, as the best things when once corrupted are observed to become the worst; it had now long devoted itself to revenge upon the world in general, the slight it had principally received from two or three particular people.

Miss Busy had a sprightliness of disposition that could not but charm every body; and she had such an art of disguising the severity of her censures, that whatever might be the effect of considering and scanning her words afterwards, she never failed to please every body, even the people she was the most severe upon, while present. Her early intelligence in scandal, and the sharpness of her raillery upon all occasions of it, made her a favourite of the first rank in all companies, who loved to know the worst sides of the characters of their friends and acquaintance; (and, gentle reader! how much less is that than all the companies in the world?) while the dread of her tongue procured her the appearance, at least, of the utmost civility even from those, who hated her at the bottom ever so heartily.

With these qualifications it is no wonder that this lady was the intimate acquaintance of every body at Bath; but among the number whom she thus complimented  
with

with her familiarity, there were but very few whom she did the honour of admitting into her friendship.

*A likeness of manners is the strongest of all foundations of friendship*; and as this accomplished person did herself the honour of supposing she saw something in Lady Juliet's manner that was more like her own, than any thing she had ever met with in one of her own sex before, it is no wonder that she courted a peculiar intimacy with her, and professed herself to have the most inviolable attachment to her.

Before these sincere friends had broke up from their tête à tête of the afternoon, the artful Miss Busy had taken care accidentally to bring up the name of the *new titled knight* a second time; and though the matter of their controversy was avowedly to be no farther a part of their conversation for that time, she had found so many other things to interest herself in, about both him and the lady she conversed with, that she artfully drew her by degrees so much off her guard, as to fish out every secret thought of her heart about him; and even made herself a witness of her most solemn vows of fidelity to him. This lady had long taught herself to look upon every body's success in a love affair as an insult upon her own misfortunes; and had firmly

ly

ly persuaded herself, that her honour was concerned in doing her utmost to prevent the success of every thing of that kind. She had received several notices of the promising situation of this amour with a burning heart, under the mask of a smiling countenance; and had finally, before she parted with Lady Juliet kiss'd her with an unsuspectable ardour of affection, and added, ' My dearest creature, I am sensible that rascal Cupid blinds and misleads you a little in this affair—but as you have honoured me with your confidence in it, you may depend upon a sacred and inviolable secrecy in regard to every thing you have let me into.'

Such were the protestations with which this friendly visiter heard the tender professions of love and constancy, which Lady Juliet had declared in regard to Sir Solomon, immediately before their going into the rooms; but they were scarce got half the length of the first table there, before the gay widow was coquetting it amidst a circle of beaux, receiving the addresses of every one there, with all the complacency and seeming acknowledgments of gratitude in the world; and the faithful confidant who found it no difficult thing to drop her in these circumstances, had fastened herself to that excellent spreader of scandal Lady Gazette, and related



related to her every circumstance of the affair between the *simple knight* and the *widow*.

For an hour afterwards Miss Busy might be seen tripping it from table to table, and from party to party, and buzzing in the ear of first one and then another of the female company. At length looking carefully round her, and finding that there was not one of that sex to whom she had not told the whole history of her afternoon's visit, and all that had passed at it, she composedly squatted herself down at a card-table, and left the scandal to propagate itself among the other sex, with all the advantages of the additional graces it might attain in the telling.

Lady Juliet was too much taken up with the men, to mind what was doing among the women; and not having the least suspicion of what had passed between her friend and the rest of them, she gave abundant confirmations of what that lady had related, by the particular countenance she gave the silent knight, among a circle of such formidable rivals.

If there were any that had been absent this evening from the rooms, or from any other accident had not heard the news of this famous amour, they were abundantly informed of it before they were dressed



dress'd the next day. Bath is a place where the love of news is infinitely dearer than it was in Athens of old; and where it is almost a moot point with a lady whether she would chuse to have an intrigue of her own, or to be able to relate one of another. The whole female world was form'd into parties, at the lodgings of the sick and lame, by eight in the morning, to quarrel who should first give this most important piece of intelligence.

Only Miss Busy was absent from these private committees. She very well knew she had so sufficiently set every body else to work, that she need not employ her own tongue in the common office: far deeper schemes filled her thoughts: there was a discovery yet behind, which, though she saw the difficulty of making, yet she resolutely determin'd to have, if fair means or if foul could any way get at it.

Lady Juliet, who suspected nothing of the good offices her friend had done her, could have no idea that she was now to be the subject of all the conversation of the place; or that the eyes of every body of each sex would be upon her when she next appeared. She dress'd in the morning with as much calmness and composure as the thoughts of her approaching nuptials, (which she had by this time prevail'd with herself

herself to resign her heart wholly up to,) would let her; and went early to the pump room. The gentle knight was there before her: he could not imagine why he was so extremely particulariz'd that morning: People's eyes he observed were upon him, and he could see that they all whispered and laughed as they look'd at him.

Every body in the room the men as well as the women had heard that Lady Juliet was desperately in love with him; that she preserv'd his letters in her bosom, and esteemed him as the finest genius of the the age; when the subject of their raillery entered. The elegance of her person, the grace of her undress, and the ease of her deportment, conjur'd up in the women an envy and discontent with themselves which suppressed their triumph, and struck them silent a few moments. In this time the lady had singled out the knight; and as his invincible modesty still prevented his making any attacks, she did every thing that the decorums of the sex would permit on her part; and behaved like one who was determined to surrender at discretion.

The prettiest love-scene in the world was carrying on between this lady who was sitting on one of the benches, and the lover who was cringing at her right hand, with

with the eyes and attention of the company engrossed solely upon them; when the indefatigable Miss Busy entered the room, leading in, a modest plain dressed man with a look of great merit and great humility, and whom, as soon as she had got all the eyes of all the company upon, she introduced to her fair friend.

The unravelling of the whole secret, and the fatal catastrophe of this most promising adventure now drew nigh. The lucky event which had crowned Miss Busy's researches, and the apparent truth of her suspicions, in regard to the knight added to the joy of disconcerting so triumphant an affair as this had hitherto been, had elevated her thoughts so highly, that she could remember nothing of honour, friendship, or avow'd fidelity; but with a triumphant look led up the unknown person she had brought with her, and presented him in form to Lady Juliet. The company found themselves too much interested in whatever related to this lady, not to pay their utmost attention to every circumstance that had any thing to do with her affairs: they saw the knight colour and draw back at this gentleman's approach, while Lady Juliet, who knew nothing of him, discovered not the least discomposure.



The successful lady, who had introduced this unknown person, seconded her recommendation of him with a malicious smile, which spoke a triumph not to be concealed, and which at length gave way to these words, ‘ My dearest friend, why don’t you  
‘ thank me for the kindest office I ever did  
‘ you in my life ?—Madam, I present your  
‘ ladyship’s flover to you—the happy man  
‘ whom since you say you are proud to ac-  
‘ knowledge yourself in love with, I need  
‘ not conceal.—Why all this coldness and  
‘ surprize ?—Did not you tell me, yester-  
‘ day, no woman need be ashamed of a  
‘ passion for the author of those letters,  
‘ which you shewed me ?—This is the  
‘ gentleman who wrote them.—You know  
‘ it is no uncommon thing for lovers to  
‘ correspond under feigned names.—This  
‘ gentleman had not indeed seen you him-  
‘ self, Madam, when he sent them, but  
‘ he was prevailed with to write them  
‘ by one who had,—by the gentle Sir  
‘ Solomon here, who, I find, purchased  
‘ all these fine things for you at the ex-  
‘ pence of a bird, a bottle, and a brace of  
‘ guineas.’

This good-natur’d speech was delivered so loud, that the whole assembly heard every syllable of it: they were bursting forth into a roar of applause on the address  
of



of Miss Busy, but were influenced to suppress it a moment by the rising up of the lady, who was principally concerned in it; that they might enjoy a double triumph in this happy victory, and in the effect of her expected confusion on it.

Lady Juliet was no sooner arisen from place, than she addressed herself to her faithful friend with a most graceful curtesy; and with the utmost seeming composure said to her, ‘ I am indeed obliged to you, my dear, for the most acceptable service that I ever received from any body. — You will pardon the error that has given occasion to so exemplary an act of friendship. — I had not liv’d *long enough* in the world to suspect these subtleties in men, nor purchas’d the knowledge of their baseness at so *dear a rate as you have done*.—My dear, I thank you, and to convince this good company, whom you have been so obliging to make witnesses of this affair, that I make a proper use of your admonitions—I give to this gentleman, continues she, pointing to Sir Solomon, his final discharge from my service; and to you, Sir, (to the other gentleman) my purse: which I would have taken a less publick method of offering you, but that this lady has already acquainted every body here, that  
‘ fortune

‘ fortune has been so little just to your merit, as to make it agreeable to you to accept of it.—My dear Miss Busy, (she concluded) that gentleman’s figure and fortune with this gentleman’s understanding, would have made up a lover, that no woman need be afraid to own would not be disagreeable to her: but till such a combination offers itself to me again in one person, I flatter myself I shall have no farther occasion for your friendship.’

## C H A P. IV.

*A three days eclipse of Lady Juliet.—Various conquests of the female world in that time. Captain Taste recovers from an indisposition.—History of the unfortunate Miss Patty Hasty.—A second plot of Miss Busy against Lady Juliet.*

A Sullen discontent that shewed itself in the general face of the company, and in a tenfold strength in that of Miss Busy, in the place of their intended joy, sufficiently proved that the prudence and severity of the answer of Lady Juliet had turned the tables upon them, and left no  
body

body but herself any cause of triumph. The malicious author of the discovery, tho' stung to the heart with the subtle keenness of her answer, was afraid to make any reply to it: and a sullen silence that became general after this, and lasted till the morning party broke up, shewed sufficiently that the company were thoroughly out of humour with the event they had just been witnesses to, tho' no body car'd to say any thing about it.

The gentle knight had thought it prudent to get away immediately after this unlucky adventure; and it was supposed that the lady would have followed his example. The mixture of vexation, disappointment and confusion in her heart, however little she had betrayed of it to the company, would indeed have argued on the same side the question, and infallibly have carry'd her off; but insuperable pride, that could not yield to the meanness of owning a disgrace, however severely she felt it, got the better of all her other passions; forc'd a smiling complacency on her face, that deceived every body into a belief, that her heart was in perfect tranquillity, and kept her the last person in the pump-room.

After remaining in possession of the field, she knew no body could charge any future retreat upon the consequences of what had happened

happened on it; and therefore found herself left at full liberty to take any measures she liked best. Tho' her masterly address had hitherto been successful enough to deceive every body, she soon found, now alone, that she could not deceive herself: her heart confessed that she had been shamefully beaten; and by that time she had got home, the woman prevailed so much over the heroine, that she threw herself upon the bed, and confessed her despair in a flood of tears.

It is not to be imagin'd from this, that the unfortunate lady had fallen desperately in love with the false knight, and was lamenting the miseries of a successful passion: far other thoughts employed her breast. She had launched out into life for this time with very different views from those of a raw girl; she had known enough of the world to despise the imaginary chains of love; she had set out with a concerted plan, in which interest, however disguised was the sole active and inspiring principle; and this plan she had the disappointment to find disconcerted at a time when she thought herself most secure of succeeding in it. She had with the utmost coolness of deliberation singled out a husband from the herd of mankind, she had prevailed with herself to accept him, and had settled every the minutest



test article on this grand affair: and when every thing was ready for accomplishing the scheme, she had been betrayed and prevented from carrying it into execution by the cunning of a rival. This, notwithstanding the high contempt Miss Busy had pretended to hold the knight in, she now easily saw was at the bottom of all that she had been doing: and she knew enough of her own sex to be very sensible, that even the disgrace which that lady had brought upon the knight, was but the effect of vengeance for her own-slighted passion.

It was with the utmost tranquillity that she resigned up that gentle swain to her jealous mistress: but much was yet behind in regard to her own conduct. The first resolution she came to, was the passing sentence of a three day's exile upon herself. This severe decree was the result partly of revenge, and partly of prudence; and tho' her favourite passion pride represented to her the nauseous triumph of her rival, and of the whole female world, who might be not improperly called her general rival, on her disappearing; and urged to her thoughts the thousand severe things which would be said on her not daring to shew her face again, as it was very plain they would interpret it; yet when she considered the  
the

the ruined state of her affairs, and the very improper temper she was at present in for the re-adjusting them, she became wisely inexorable in her decree, and was as securely fixed down to her chamber, as if all the bolts and bars of a baſtile had kept her there.

While the three days of Lady Juliet's eclipse were employed on her own part in concerting the plan of some new amour, and in singling out the subject of it in a more careful manner than she had done that of the last; the belles of the place, who like the lesser stars, had their opportunity of shining, while the queen of night was under the horizon, made a very different use of them. The defeat of our heroine made an universal subject of conversation for those antient ladies who were influenced by envy alone, as beyond the period of life for rivalry: The news of so audacious a beauty's disgrace afforded these antiquated forms matter of long entertainment, for the illnatured pleasure of seeing others likely to succeed as badly as themselves: but the rival belles, who had too severely felt the pangs of disregarded beauty, during the time of her shining among them, were wisely determined to make a better use of the opportunity this accident had given them of resuming their empire; and many a sighing  
swain

swain had reason tho' he knew nothing of it to bless the influence of this superior charmer.

*Beau Dimple*, who had for two whole months courted the irresolute *Mrs. Waver*, without obtaining the slightest hint in regard to her favourable opinion of him, or even so much as finding out whether she had any opinion at all; was amazed, on this happy evening, at the attention she was pleased to pay his vows and protestations; and gaining courage from his good reception to press the consummation of what the lady had no mind to procrastinate, (as she knew not how soon the season of her reign might be over) he obtained permission to order a parson for the next morning.

The facetious Mr. Scribble, well known for these many years by the name of the Bath Poet, in reward for a satire which he wrote that evening on Lady Juliet, had the honour of being detained to breakfast with the revengeful Miss Busy, on his presenting it to her the next morning. At Bath a man and a woman are never missed at the same time from the publick places, but they are suspected of being together; and the malicious part of the sex, who hated that lady for her superior understanding, took occasion to spread a report, that her chamber-door was locked for during  
the

the greatest part of that time. The conjunction of the satyr and the satyress was celebrated in the ribbald rhimes of some brother-poet of the place, who had the same occasion of distaste to Mr. Scribble, that the ladies had to Miss Busy; the elegant production was unluckily marked with the day of the month; and in consequence of this, a journey which that lady took about a quarter of a year ago to see a friend in the country, (the period of which happened to be just that of nine months, from the date of these verses,) gave the scandalous suspicion of the rest of the sex occasion to whisper it about, that this visit was the natural result of the morning's meeting before mentioned; and was only made to a gentleman who advertises convenient lodgings for single ladies on private occasions, from Pon's coffee-house near St. Martin's-Lane.

Such were the consequences of Lady Juliet's disappearing only one day; the conquests made during the other two were not less numerous or remarkable. On the first of these, that is, on the second day of her disappearing, the venerable Mr. Scrapeish, who had now lived a batchelor to the age of seventy-two, and had occasioned his nephew to shoot himself through the head, because he would not consent to his marrying a



woman of merit, who had a few thousands less than a Smithfield share in the bargain; professed at once the veneration she had inspired him with for the sex, and the contempt that passion had given him for money, by marrying his maid of eighteen; if it be allowable in us to use that word in speaking of a lady, who had already blessed the world with a daughter. On the third and last day of this retirement, among many incidents of lesser note, the sage *Mrs. Roulet*, by a sort of reverse of the common scene of things, having won of *Master Biby* a good deal more than he was able to pay, was generously pleased to compound for the exposing him to his father; by taking him for her husband.

While the subordinate beauties of this gay place were thus signaling themselves during the eclipse of lady Juliet, like Homer's heroes in the absence of Achilles; she passed the time of her retirement in as much ill humour as that hero. The remembrance of her late disappointment had disturbed her mind so violently for the two first days, that of the deal of business in her thoughts, nothing had been executed: on the third, the inward storm somewhat subsiding, she began to consider seriously and attentively of her original plan of action. Whatever ruin and destruction the violence  
of

of her first thoughts on the late defeat might have described to her, she now began to find that she was (excepting only for the loss of a few days) just where she had set out; and that she had nothing more to do, than to single out another object for her favour a little more carefully than she had done the first.

Neither her pride nor her prudence would now suffer her to condescend to enquire about the men of the place herself: but the good lady with whom she lodged, who was truly a widow and a Bath landlady; that is to say one who knew the value of men and money to the minutest particle, was a very proper person to be employed in the enquiry, and was one whom a reward would be sure to work sufficiently upon.

This careful purveyor equipped herself early in the morning for the search, and after enquiring into the coffee-house and toy-shop lifts for the names; and among the tradesmen and servants for the circumstances of the people who made most figure in the gay world; she returned before dinner with a compleat inventory of the stock of the place.

Lady Juliet commanded her to dine with her, and as her passions were not at all interested in the case, she calmly and

deliberately weighed every circumstance of the several persons named to her; and after taking the remainder of the day to consider of it; in spite of the many favourable things which that gentlewoman had the address frequently to find occasions of say on the subject of a young captain, a cousin of her own, and a gentleman of a neighbouring nation, she determined to plant all the artillery of her charms against the old and amorous remains of what was once *Mellfluvio*.

The fortune of this gentleman was abundantly sufficient to answer her utmost expectation; and as this was the material point she had in view, she easily reconciled herself to the thoughts of bearing with an old fellow for a few years, whose good sense and good humour would render him supportable to her for one twentieth part of his time, and whose infirmities would lay him safely up for the other nineteen.

It was determined in form that this gentleman should be the happy man: and to the praise of that vanity which a woman of Lady Juliet's many accomplishments could not be without, the difficulty of making conquest gave her no sort of perplexity, nor could she bring herself to suppose that there was any doubt of her conquering in half an hour that heart, which, when it  
was

was more susceptible of charms in the fair sex, had yet eluded the attacks of the successive beauties of at least three ages.

It does not always happen that the cool and undisturbed determinations of a cloister, perfectly fall in with the thoughts of a more publick life; and by great good fortune, the gentleman just mentioned, by a fate like this, escaped the last attack that probably will ever be levelled with any prospect of success against his continuing to be the happiest man in the world, without owing any thing of it to the mischievous sex.

While the heroine of our story thus meditated mischief in private, the eyes of all the rest of the female world were called off by another object, to which every thing they had before taken notice of appeared poor and lifeless. This was the accomplished *Captain Taste*, who had indeed been at Bath some time, but having come thither really on account of his health, had been hitherto incognito. He had at this time first got rid of his disposition; and on the evening of the third day of Lady Juliet's eclipse, appeared for the first time in publick.

This gentleman, who to the advantages of an excellent understanding, has the more immediately striking graces of a fine figure, a good face, and an open masculine



## 54      The ADVENTURES of

and noble countenance; now appeared with the additional advantage of that sort of tenderness and delicacy, which one naturally acquires by confinement and a slender diet; and which always tends to render a man more than ordinarily agreeable to the women, as it brings him somewhat nearer to themselves.

The captain was just now arrived at a fortune that enabled him to make that figure in the world, which his natural ambition had always given him a strong tendency to; and the consummate elegance of his dress, the politeness of his manner, and the unaffected ease that hung about him in every action, gave him in the whole an interest in every woman's heart that saw him.

The whole female world became in an instant the scene of an universal rivalry: the captain was particular to no body, but behaved with so general a complaisance to every lady, that not one whom he spoke to that night, but believed him fixed for ever to her; and wished every other's throat cut to whom he spoke, for robbing her of a moment of his company.

The vanity of women in converting common civilities of the men into particular attachments, is one of the most common foibles of the sex; and helps more than every other accident to fill up their train  
of

of lovers. It is owing to this mistake, that we hear such innumerable stories of faithless and ungenerous men; and see thousands of fair wretches complaining in the bitterest terms of the inconstancy and perfidy of people who never made the least advances to them, or ever had them in their thoughts.

The mutual hatred of the women to one another on this interesting occasion, did not prevent them however from joining in a league against the common enemy, and terror of them all. The pump-room, the next morning, resounded with the praises of Captain Taste; one celebrated his sprightliness, another his judgment, a third his hand, and a fourth his teeth: one declared him the greatest genius she had ever met with; and another affirmed, that no body's clothes ever sat so well: in short, every woman praised him according to the limits of her own understanding, or according to what she had fixed her ideas of perfection and excellence in; but it was not long before the whole company turned pale at the name of Lady Juliet, whom one of the rivals, who thought herself more interested in the captain's affection than the rest, with a full heart and a deep sigh enquired after.

It was easily guessed that the disappearing of this lady was only the effect of the little disgrace that had happened to her in the affair of *Sir Solomon* ; and it was as easily concluded, that it would not be of long duration. The very envy of the whole sex could not but allow, that the captain and she seemed cut out by nature for one another; and that their meeting could not fail of making them both despise every thing else in the world : if these dreadfull effects of it were not some way prevented. That something was to be done was clear to every body ; but what that should be, seemed beyond the reach of thought. After much deliberation, the remembrance of the happy success of Miss Busy's late scheme, turned the eyes and thoughts of the whole assembly upon her ; and the lavish compliments they paid her understanding immediately engaged her in the service.

After some thought, this sagacious lady determined that the pride of Lady Juliet was the only thing they had to work upon with any prospect of success : And that the way to interest this against itself, was to give it food of a wrong kind. In short, that the only way to prevent her liking the captain was to advise her to like him : And that they might trust to her disdain of having a lover chosen for her by others, to make her

her detest what it was too evident she would otherwise admire. Miss Busy, though the improperest person in the world to attempt a new intimacy and confidence with Lady Juliet, after what had so lately passed between them, yet for the common good, took this arduous task upon herself; and told them, she required no other assistance in it, but that the captain's heart should be attacked at the same time by somebody else; that he might, if possible, be fixed in another amour before he saw her.

This latter task naturally devolved upon the person in company, (whoever that was) whom that gentleman had seemed to be most attached to the night before; but this decision occasioned a catastrophe, which had like to have destroyed the whole scheme. There was scarce a woman present who did not claim the office on the score of this pre-eminence; and the dispute had not been easily decided between so many rivals, had not the sprightly and blooming *Miss Patty Hasty* laid in a claim, they none of them pretended to; by assuring them, with a blush that covered all her face, that the captain had told her he loved her to distraction as they went out of the rooms; and stole a kiss of her neck as he put her into her chair.



This was an instance of passion which no body could contradict, though there was not a word of truth in it: and though no more than the effect of the early ripe imagination of the lady who spoke it, it gave her a title that not one of the company pretended to dispute.

The grand point thus settled, no more remained than for all to repair to their posts. The company in general needed no admonitions to appear in the utmost advantages of dress in the evening, in order to take off his eyes if the dreaded rival should attack his heart that way: in fine the lady, whose business it was to engage the captain, had her instructions to go to the rooms, where she would be sure, at that time of day, to find him at the gold-table; while the grand projector of the whole scheme made Lady Juliet a morning visit.

*Miss Patty* was barely seventeen; she was extremely pretty, of a very free address, and very ignorant of the world: an excellent advocate for the cause she was engaged in. She went immediately to the place appointed, plagued the captain at his play, and in a few minutes pester'd him so briskly with her raillery, at a man of his genius and understanding for fixing himself at so paultry a diversion, that he found it was impossible to continue it; and breaking  
from

from the set gallantly told her, ‘ that there  
 ‘ was but one thing in the world he loved  
 ‘ better than play ; but as she had brought  
 ‘ him that, he could not hesitate to sacri-  
 ‘ fice the other to her.’

This led the way to a thousand other prettinesses of the same sort ; and, in fine, the girl was so elevated with the success of her negotiation, that she could not refuse the captain leave to come in, when he had waited on her to her lodgings. He there in a few minutes put the finishing period to this short adventure, and left the unfortunate girl, (who, in the eagerness of her heart, had given up every thing to the imaginary pleasure of improving upon the common scheme, and of running away with so charming a fellow from such a number of rivals) to learn at her leisure, that the woman who submits to her ruin in order to make sure of her lover, takes the most certain method of all others to sacrifice her interest in him for ever.

The success of the enterprize Miss Busy had engaged herself in, did not prove quite so easy to her, as this conquest did to the captain. The one had an unguarded and unsuspecting innocent to deal with ; the other one of the subtlest of the subtle sex ; and one who, into the bargain, was prepossessed to the utmost in her disfavour,  
 and

and who was sure to be upon her guard in every step before her.

Lady Juliet had, for the three days of her contrition, seen no body; but that penance being now over, she had this morning given her orders to admit any body that came. What was her surprize, in consequence of this, to see her first visiter in the person of the malicious enemy *Miss Busy*, who had been the sole occasion of all her disgrace and uneasiness. Some very severe things passed on this occasion; but the lady, who had expected all this, was prepared for it, and had laid up a stock of resolution to bear it in patience. When the violence of the storm was a little over, she put on an excellently well-disssembled sorrow, confessed the baseness and ingratitude of what she had before done; told her she should never forgive herself the uneasiness she saw it gave her, by her not appearing in publick ever since; and begged her with all the eloquence she could conjure up, to do what in reality she dreaded most of all things in the world that was to come to the rooms that night.

The keeping Lady Juliet away from the publick places, and the preventing her from liking the captain were the two great points this subtle advocate had in view, and she trusted both to the same resource, which

which was her certain pride of refusing and despising whatever she was desired or advised to do. The coolness with which Lady Juliet received all the civilities that were expressed to her on this occasion, gave her subtle visiter an excellent opportunity of pressing her the more to appear again, by telling her how charming a fellow was come among them, ‘ One (continued she) that my dear friend must be in love with: one who has so much merit, that he will make you bless that malicious trick which I am now heartily ashamed of, and which robbed you of Sir Solomon.’

The name of Sir Solomon called up the remembrance of the last defeat so strongly in Lady Juliet’s mind, that a second storm arose, which all the concessions of Miss Busy could not allay; and in consequence of which, that subtle creature took her leave with a pretended unwillingness, and even with dissembled tears. Her heart, however, could not but applaud itself, on the excellent address with which she had introduced her advice about the captain, merely as a secondary thing, and that in so disguised a manner, that she persuaded herself all the discernment of so sensible an adversary could not find her out.

Miss



Miss Busy was not deceived in this; whether it was that passion put Lady Juliet off her guard, and blinded her apprehension; or whether the scene was so well played on the others part, as to make a discovery impossible; so it was, that this enraged Lady had no suspicion of the intent of the visit she had receiv'd, but was amazed at the impertinence of it. She determined, in pure opposition, to stay at home another day, and to despise the celebrated captain wherever she should chance to meet him, that she might shew her malicious enemy in what contempt she held her opinion.

The vexation of a second disappointment however, and that from the same quarter, sat but ill upon the haughty Lady Juliet. She cried heartily for very anger, and at dinner could not be prevailed upon either to eat or speak by all the assiduity of her landlady. Even her more serious affairs were sacrificed to her pride and anger, and not the remembrance of all the mighty matters she had destined for the business of that evening, could prevail with her to think of doing what so hated a creature as Miss Busy had desired her.

In the midst of this resolute and sullen obstinacy; Venus, who was now too much interested in this lady's exile, threw herself

at

at the knees of Jupiter, and succeeded so well in her remonstrances and entreaties to that deity, that he sent down to her the goddess of Persuasion in the shape of a new gawse cap. The eyes of our fair heroine sparkled at her approach: her bosom heaved with extasy as she put her on: and when in that happy situation the eloquent goddess made so good a use of her nearness to her ear, and whispered so many encomiums on the clearness of her complexion, set off by her sheer threads, that the whole face of things was instantly altered; smiles and dimples now took the place of frowns and tears, and Betty was ordered to prepare the toilet with all possible expedition.

The concerted plan of a life of affluence and gaiety now opened itself again before her enraptured eyes, and at the head of it, supported by two crutches, the laughing favourite Melstuvio. The conquest the lady intended of this well fortified, and as it were impregnable heart, appeared to her of so much consequence, that she took more than ordinary care and pains in the preparing for it: not one, the minutest particular that could add any thing of either the agreeable or the splendid to her figure but what was employ'd; and it is not paying too great a compliment to her skill,

skill, to acknowledge that she look'd even better than she had ever done before, on this occasion.

The time that had been taken up in preparing for this attempt was so much, that the graver part of the company were beginning to think of leaving the rooms, before this accomplished charmer was ready to go to them. The women, who were in the grand secret, and who had not met since morning, came all thither earlier than ordinary this evening, excepting only the lady, who had undertaken to manage that part of the plot which regarded the captain: some serious thoughts, of a very different nature, from any that had enter'd into her heart before, had this afternoon so often interrupted her dressing, that they had all time to hear the success of Miss Busy's negotiation before she came in.

That artful creature had seen deep enough into Lady Juliet's heart, to venture to speak boldly of her success; she promised, that they should not see that fatal beauty appear in haste; and that when they did, they should be in no danger of her receiving addresses from the captain.

It was with some impatience, that this designing set waited the coming in of their  
their

their other emissary, to hear of the success of her part of the negotiation. The captain was already there; but notwithstanding every body has dress'd at him, in so labour'd a manner, that this was by far the gayest assembly *Batb* ever saw; he had paid them so little respect that he was fix'd at one of the tables, where he seem'd to regard nothing but the stakes; except that now-and-then he gave a glance as if he look'd for something that he expected but did not see.

This riddle was at length explain'd at once to the satisfaction, and to the hearty mortification of the company, by the entrance of Miss *Hastive* into the room. The captain rose from the table on the instant, and going up to the lady treated her with a tenderness and respect that at once shew'd them the success of her attempt, and her triumph over them all. Their mutual congratulations, on the first account, were immediately succeeded by a whisper, that they did not doubt but the pert chit had purchas'd the captain's good graces very dear; in short, they propagated through the room the story of what had happen'd at her lodgings, though not one of them in reality knew, or believ'd a syllable of it themselves.

The



66      The ADVENTURES of

The whole scandal of the place had exhausted itself, and the ladies who had been at such pains to dress themselves for admiration were now out of spirits, and grown familiar to the eye by three hours acquaintance, when to the utter consternation of them all, *Lady Juliet* tripp'd into the room, in full bloom and spirits, and just risen from the uncommon labours of the toilet already described. The paleness that an ill natured confusion gave to every other female face at her appearance, added new lustre by the contrasste to her charms ; and the mortified rival had the mortification to see the captain, who was at that time entertaining *Miss Patty* with the utmost gallantry, stop in the middle of a period, as he turn'd his eyes toward *Lady Juliet*, and do the rudest and cruellest thing he ever did in his life, in breaking off without ceremony from a girl, who had treated him with infinitely more respect than he deserved from her, and abandoning her, without the least shadow of reason, to all the miseries of a hopeless and fatal passion : for from this instant the faithless conqueror never look'd upon her again.

A man of the captain's true taste for the amiable in a woman, could not but discover in *Lady Juliet* charms that made every

every thing else insipid. He approached towards her with all that confidence that affluence, prosperity, and a good opinion of a man's self can inspire, but he stopp'd before he came up; and in spite of his wonted assurance on these occasions converted his premeditated compliment into a silent sigh, which he utter'd with great fervour as he slid close by her side.

Twenty other attempts to attack this powerful charmer, every one of which was assisted by a resolution of not being baffled like the former, all terminated in the same manner: and in fine the evening broke up without any farther advance being made on the captain's part towards attacking the fortress, than a thorough reconnoitring every visible part of it.

## C H A P. V.

*Period of the amour of Miss Hastive.--*

*A council of war call'd by Miss Busy's party—breaks up without coming to any resolution.—Total defeat in the pump-room.—The captain's amour with Lady Juliet goes on very successfully.*

**I**T can hardly be necessary to describe the sentiments of the female world on  
Lady

Lady Juliet's appearance this evening at the rooms, and on the captain's behaviour on that occasion. The unfortunate *Miss Patty* who now saw her fate in its severest turn, only sav'd herself from swooning in the midst of the company by a flood of tears; and express'd her resentment at the captain's perfidy as she pass'd by him in her way out, by a soft whisper from a bursting heart;—*most ungrateful of men—farewell for ever.*

If any thing could surpass the distraction of this truly pitiable girl, it was the raging malice of *Miss Busy*; as this lady prided herself upon her art and cunning, and had long rooted in her breast, as her supreme pleasure, the preventing the happiness of others, in the place of that of enjoying the same sort of pleasures herself; her resentment was doubled on this provoking occasion, in which she saw her plots all baffled; and the woman she hated most of all the world, rising in despite of her to every thing her heart could wish.

Long after the generality of the company had broke up, this revengeful lady, with a dozen or more of the warmest in her party, had remain'd in a corner of the room to consult of the proper measures in this unexpected extremity: but passion usurp'd the place of thinking so generally

generally among them, and this in every one in ~~so~~ different way, that after some hours wild consideration, the president determin'd that nothing was to be resolv'd on but to go on in the old measures. All that was generally talk'd of, was that alleviating circumstance, the assurance of the ruin of *Miss Patty*, whom every one took a pleasure in expressing a malicious pity for, and could now despise as much as they had envy'd her an hour or two before.

It is not to be suppos'd, that Lady Juliet was blind to the baffled advances the captain had made to her; nor would it be wonderful, if a heart so susceptible of the first impressions of love as her's had become enamour'd with so much merit, and so much modesty; or if she had even fallen at once into raptures with the Torrismond who approach'd her, with *such respect and awful homage*: something like this was very busy about her heart all the time that she continued in the rooms; and so much indeed was sacrific'd to him at sight, that all the meditated mischief of the night was suspended, and the happy *Mellfurvio* hobbled to his bed in peace. As love, according to this lady's settled plan of action, was however to be but an under-passion in her heart, and was only allow'd



allow'd to influence her secondarily to interest; she had (tho' with some difficulty) absolutely suppress'd the effects of all its emotions for the present, and left herself at free liberty till she had an opportunity of enquiring of her confidant at home, what this aimable fellow's circumstances were.

This enquiry was so earnest in her thoughts that her landlady was commanded as she got out of her chair to follow her up stairs; and before the first pin was taken out toward the undressing her, the grand question, *Who is Captain Taste* was ask'd with great eagerness.

The captain's generosity on all occasions had already gain'd him the esteem of all the lower people at Bath before he had appeared in publick, and this good lady had heard so much of it, that she ran herself out of breath with his encomiums in an instant; and in fine had so many favourable things to say of this charming gentleman, that she sav'd the lady's modesty the confusion of asking any second question about him; and entertain'd her with a detail of his praises that lasted till supper-time.

Lady Juliet, who was already sufficiently pleas'd with the figure and person of the man, and had discernment enough to see

see that he was struck with her charms in no common manner, no sooner was informed that he was worth between thirty and forty thousand pounds, than she determined her heart, and became perfectly resolv'd in his favour. She could neither eat nor sleep for thinking of the happy change in her fate, from the expectation of such a husband as Melfludio to so glorious a fellow as the captain; and the pride of running away with a man whom she saw every body had a mind to, added not a little to the joy of the conquest. She even now saw through the second artifice of her false friend Miss Busy, and could remember that in all the encomiums on this gentleman, the praising of whom she now found had been the real business of her visit, she had artfully concealed his fortune; and that every thing she had said was only intended to provoke her to take no notice of him.

Love carried Lady Juliet early the next morning to the pump-room, but to the great good fortune of her modesty, the same passion which was a little stronger in the captain than even in herself, had carried him thither first. They met almost alone in the place, and there needed little trouble to bring on a conversation between  
two

two people who had now so hearty a mind to speak to one another.

If the captain had been before charmed with the face and figure of this lady, he was now infinitely more so with her wit and spirit; and if the lady was before determined in his favour at all adventures; how happy was her surprize to find in a man whom she had thought too much a beau to have common sense, and understanding, which she easily saw superior to her own; and which was embellished with so much modest diffidence, that she did not envy the superiority.

Among other topicks the conversation ran upon *poetry* and *musick*, and the lady who adored these two ravishing sciences, was astonished and charm'd beyond expression to find her new lover had a genius for the one, and a taste for the other, that the best composers in both might be equally enamoured with, and afraid of.

So much is love more vigilant than all the other passions, that a full half hour had been spent between our hero and heroine, in which every syllable that had been uttered, had tended to make them more and more in love with one another, before envy which is certainly the next most restless passion in the world, had call'd up the  
miserable

miserable *Miss Busy* and her associates, and brought them to the place.

The astonishment and vexation that shewed itself in every countenance on the seeing two people whom they heartily wished on the two sides of the world, not only got together, but become so intimately acquainted, from the distance and formality of the night before, is not easily to be conceived. Lady Juliet had now entertained herself with so much love, that she chose to vary the scene by giving a little loose to ill nature. She indulged to the utmost a cruel triumph both in herself, and in the happy partner of her thoughts, over the uneasiness which she saw that happiness occasioned in so many other people.

Rage too great for words, kept every body of the opposite party silent: at length the arch enemy *Miss Busy* rallying all her spirits for a last charge, and inspired with the memory of her former conquest in the same place, broke through the ranks, and boldly made up to the lady; telling her with a malicious sneer, that spoke a disdain too great for such a heart as *Lady Juliet's* to bear, that she was proud to see her ladyship do her the honour of accepting a husband she had chosen for her.



The word *husband* occasioned a confusion that had like to have disconcerted the whole address with which *Lady Juliet* had prepared to receive this compliment as she saw it coming; but after a momentary pause she answered her with great composure: ‘ You’ll pardon, my dear madam, the disorder I received you in when you honoured me with your last visit—I thought I had obviated the occasion of it: but I was insensible, madam, that in dismissing the favour of your cares for me, till a person was found with the genius of the letter writer, and the figure and fortune of the knight, I had done nothing to preclude your good offices in regard to this gentleman—I am ready to acknowledge with you, madam, that the person I did not suppose to have existed, is found here: and captain, continued she (giving him a gentle pat upon the arm) you don’t know how much you are obliged to this good natur’d lady for my favourable opinion of you.’

The company thunderstruck with this answer, turned all their eyes big with a thousand reproaches on *Miss Busy*, who they found had under the design of separating these people, brought them together in such a manner, that nothing they could now have any idea of could part them:

them; and the unfortunate lady for her own part, struck with horror at the counter effect of her favourite scheme, forswore at once plotting and publick places; and banished herself the next day into the country, as she in her passion declared, for ever.

Company so little in humour with one another as the assembly in the pump-room now was, could not keep long together: the ladies went their several ways, some to private visits, some to church, and the captain and Lady Juliet to the walks: there under the covert of those trees which had heard ten thousand perjuries before, the captain made vows enough to have won half the women in the place. The lady received them with a sort of raillery, that shewed plainly enough that if she did not believe them true, she at least wish'd them so. This agreeable *tête à tête* broke up with the lady's telling her lover, that for her own part she knew exactly how far to believe this sort of gallantry; and as for him, she had a favourable opinion enough of his understanding to suppose, that he need not be told the liberties she had taken in regard to him in the pump-room, were rather the effect of a merited triumph over some of the company, than of that passion it was intended they should believe they arose from.

## C H A P. VI.

*A Stranger arrives at Bath—An unlucky accident is like to create a Jealousy between Captain Taste and Lady Juliet — — Advances made towards a new amour, which proceed very slowly.*

THE captain who was a man cut out for courtship, and sufficiently used to the success of it, knew very well that a woman of Lady Juliet's address and spirit, would never have been at the trouble of an apology about a thing that was indifferent to her, or have taken any pains to hide a passion that did not exist. The effect of this morning's conversation pleased him sufficiently: he went home perfectly convinced that he was not indifferent to the lady; and on consulting his most intimate friend about it, who constantly occupied the space between the two windows in his dressing room, he became so encouraged in the opinion, that it appear'd a clear case he might marry her if he would, (for he did not dare to think of her on any other terms) and it appeared about as clear to him that he would do so.

There needed but little ceremony between

tween two people who were heartily in love with one another, and who were already determined that this love should not be thrown away: in short, the captain who knew several ways to a woman's heart, courted Lady Juliet by every one of them. He complimented her in select pieces of Prior and Cowley, he commended her face, commanded a morning concert to entertain her, and lost to her at play profusely.

If Lady Juliet had had the spirit of prophesy enough in her, and with it enough of the spirit of cheating (for a softer word won't express it) that is so prevalent in the modern world, she might have made something of this turn in her lover; but their hearts and thoughts were so much the same that the consideration of its being all one to both which purse the money of either was in, which had influenced him in losing extravagantly to her, influenced her with an indifference for winning that made it come to nothing. This apparent disinterestedness however had no moderate charms in it for a man of the captain's temper, who did not discern the true motive of it.

Lady Juliet was not a little pleased with the haste with which this new amour was arriving at matrimony; and had fifty times determined within herself to prevent her



lover's wishes, by putting it in his way to ask her the last question: if she trifled about this, it was meerly because she found it was not necessary to be in haste. She was conscious enough of her charms to know there was no danger of the captain's breaking his chains; and as to her own part, though when she fairly examined her heart she could not find that her liking to his person, or satisfaction in his address really amounted to love, yet she convinced herself there was no danger of her being in love elsewhere, while it was evident that she must inevitably change for the worse whatever she changed to.

All hopes of disconcerting this prosperous amour, among the opposite party were now over, and the captain was one evening entertaining Lady Juliet with the height of his complaisance and gaiety in the rooms, when he perceived her start and turn pale, and in a moment blush again, as a plain dressed man passed by her, who had either not been seen in the rooms before, or the insignificance of whose figure had occasioned no body's ever taking any notice of him.

The captain was a little alarmed at this sudden change of countenance in the lady, and more so at the unusual inattention with which she for some minutes after heard  
what

what civilities he address'd to her. *No man can have the true seeds of love in him, without those of jealousy intermix'd among them.* The degree of the captain's uneasiness was proportioned to that of his love. He dar'd not ask the lady any questions, but silently cast a piercing eye every way about him to discover the object of his fears. The strictest scrutiny he could make could not point out to him any man in company, whom he could condescend to think he need be uneasy about; and his heart was recovering its tranquillity again, when the lady who had scarce got the bet-tea of her own confusion, first discover'd his. It was plain that they had now for the first time been absent in company from one another: and Lady Juliet as she saw she had the opportunity of declaring first, seized on it, and with an affected smile gave the lover a gentle pull by the sleeve, and with a low voice whisper'd him, *captain where are you?* the captain confessed his thoughts by tenderly pressing her hand, and saying with some emotion — *dearest creature! what was it that disturbed you.* The lady who had discernment enough to find that every thing was now at stake, and knew she had nothing for it with a man of her lover's penetration but to perplex and confound the matter,

threw the occasion of her confusion with the cleanest address imaginable upon himself, and that even without a falsity by replying, *may I'll confess—If I am jealous, 'tis of that lady*, pointing to a woman of fashion to whom the stranger had spoke as he passed by her.

We are easily brought to believe what we wish. The captain was very readily persuaded into supposing, that the disorder he had perceived in Lady Juliet's face was owing to the passion his good opinion of himself had convinced him he had inspired her with; and was not a little pleased with finding the tables turned upon his suspicions so much to his own advantage.

A few compliments made up the breach between the lovers, but some of the company, who still had their eyes upon every thing that regarded this gallant pair, easily saw the deceit. They had observed this stranger, who appeared a man of no sort of consequence among them, frequently casting very speaking looks at Lady Juliet, they perceived too that these were not thrown away upon her; and in fine that it was his accidentally omitting this compliment once as he passed by her, and at the same time addressing himself to one of the handsomest women in the place, that had occasion'd all that jealous confusion

sion which the lover had seen, though the singularity of the circumstances had prevented his making out the object of it.

A hundred tongues itch'd to tell the captain of the beginning perfidy of Lady Juliet; but no opportunity could be found that night to do it. The next morning the person who had evidently enough been the occasion of it, appeared in the pump-room, and as every body's eyes were now upon him, on account of what had happened the evening before, it was soon found out that he really had never been among them till that time. If the confusion of so remarkable a person as Lady Juliet on this gentleman's addressing another woman, had not signalized him among the company, his figure and appearance were such as would never have done it for him. He was indeed tall and not awkward; but he had nothing of that imaginary importance above him, the consciousness of which distinguishes the modern men of consequence in publick: his face had nothing handsome in it, though nothing shockingly ugly, or forbidding; his manner was rather inoffensive than contemptible; and his dress the plainest in the world, but with nothing unfashionable about it: on the whole he seemed the most cut out of any man to pass through the world, without

E 5 being



being taken any notice of in it.

Though the captain who in the first alarm of his jealousy, had cast his eyes on this gentleman, saw nothing in him to be uneasy about; Lady Juliet who had been induced by the particular regard he paid her by his looks, to observe him the whole evening, saw him with other eyes. She soon found an unaffected ease about him, which struck with her more than all the forc'd address of those esteemed the finest gentlemen of the place; and having narrowly watched the whole time the persons he spoke to, and the manner in which he conversed with them, she thought she could distinguish in that unconcernedness with which he addressed people of the first rank and dignity, something much superior to the constrain'd civilities of the generality of the company, and which bespoke much more in him than the plainness of his habit seemed to intimate.

The stranger who after paying Lady Juliet a very particular devotion with his looks every time he came within sight of her that evening; had in the remarkable instance that occasioned all the late confusion, purposely call'd off his eyes when he found her's fixed on him, and addressed a rival beauty under her very nose; had very attentively mark'd the effect the incident

dent had on her ; and was not a little satisfied with the advances he saw he had made by it.

This gentleman's sole business at Bath, lay among the fair sex ; and however little the plainness of his habit might seem to be adapted to such a purpose, he was meditating nothing less than conquests of the noblest kind among them. He had with great attention scan'd over the pretensions of every woman he saw in the rooms that evening ; and in consequence of that, had found nothing at all comparable to Lady Juliet, before he attack'd her by the first glance.

The rhetorick of his eyes had pleaded for him with some success from that time ; and his artifice in that instance we have recorded had given him sufficient proof of it. Whatever might be the sanguine state of his hopes, however, while in the rooms, they were not a little pall'd, when on enquiring as soon as he got home after the Lady's history, he heard what were her quality and estate, for the common report which never knows a medium, but will have every thing either nothing at all, or infinitely great, had not a little exaggerated on the latter article.

His cooler reflections on his pillow, when they represented to him not only the  
rank

and fortune of Lady Juliet, but with these the superior discouragement of an agreeable and a rich rival, would have persuaded him to drop the thoughts of her ; but a sort of fatality that attends these pursuits would not permit it.

Lady Juliet on her part, had not omitted to enquire to the utmost after the name and quality of the gentleman who had engrossed so much of her thoughts, and had so nearly made a fatal breach between her and the captain. No body that she knew in the rooms could tell her any thing about him ; but her faithful emissary from home having been dispatched on this important errand, soon found out his lodgings ; and the Bath landladies being all acquainted with one another, she casually dropt in at her old friends, and accidentally asking what lodgers she had in the house, was informed that she had only one sober gentleman in her best apartment, who had come to Bath purely for the benefit of the waters, and whose name was Loveill. All that was to be learned farther about him on the most careful enquiry, was that he had come down the night before in the stage coach, and had brought no servant.

However much this account might take off from the imaginary dignity, which Lady Juliet fancied she had discovered in  
this

this stranger, it had no effect on her good opinion of him in any other respect; and though she would have laughed at any body who should have thought of her liking him, yet she could not all the night drive him either out of her waking, or her sleeping thoughts. The remembrance of her escape the evening before, cautioned her however strictly enough to keep a better guard upon herself; and prevent a second surprize. This she was persuaded would answer all her purposes; and this she fairly confessed to herself was all she could pretend to.

## C H A P. VII.

*Loveill with great precaution courts Lady Juliet.—an occasional criticism on the English poets, who write words for Musick.*

**M**R. Loveill after he had slept a night upon the thoughts of his new amour, found so many reasons against, and so many causes for the continuing it, that the ballance hung wavering in the air during the whole time of his breakfasting; till by accident his landlady who had waited on him to tell him that she hoped he liked his bed, chanced to mention some word



word that sounded like *Juliet*. It happened indeed that the good woman had meant no more than to tell him, that some part of her furniture was new in July last, but so ready were his ears to seize upon every sound that was any thing like the beloved name; and so small a breath serves to turn the scale that is already equal; that this trifling accident threw him into a reverie, which the good lady that had occasioned it could by no means comprehend, but which ended in a determination in favour of his passion.

He had entered so far into the character of Lady Juliet, by means of his late evening's observation, that he found her ruling passion was pride, which according to the circumstances it had to exert its influence under, shewed itself either in the lighter form of vanity, or in a loftier ambition. He had even had penetration enough to read a genius for poetry in her countenance, and as this is always attended with a taste for musick, he concluded upon that as another given point; and upon the whole was not only determined to attempt her, but was well enough satisfied with the materials he found he had to work upon.

A man of Loveill's subtlety could not but see that the readiest way to this lady's

lady's heart, was the sacrificing some formidable rival to her; and then the throwing in her way an occasion of saying things that would be worth admiring. He had scarce time to settle so much of the form of his approaches, when he learned there was a concert that morning: he could not doubt but that he should find Lady Juliet there, and accordingly he went to meet her.

The company got together; and some soft things passed between the lady and her new lover as often as the captain who now constantly attended her every where, turned his head another way. *Mr. Loveill* had reveng'd the lady's sitting down a little closer to her lover than he thought she needed; by placing himself at the elbow of the very person by whose means he had thrown her into confusion the night before: as his conversation with this lady grew more and more familiar, Lady Juliet's seat grew more and more uneasy to her, she saw the reason of what vexed her so heartily, and she sidled farther and farther from the captain: in fine after some very expressive things had been look'd on both sides, on the occasion, *Mr. Loveill* when he thought the lady had made concessions enough, took occasion on the first full glance she gave him, to leave the lady he was with in a very abrupt manner,

ner, and carelessly to lean over the back of her ladyship's chair, under the pretence of paying his attention to a vocal performer, who just then had begun a song.

Loveill, who during the performance had kept his eyes attentively on the lady, found that he had not been mistaken in his judgment of her taste for musick and poetry ; but to his inconceivable confusion he found, that his rival the captain had a taste for these things too, which the gaiety of his habit had never suffer'd him to suspect him of.

The song was that favourite piece of the *L' Allegro* of Milton, compos'd by Handell, *Let me wander not unseen*. After the captain had very warmly, and with a great deal of spirit, commended the ease and sweetness both of the words and music of this song, and said a great many good general things on the sciences, *Loveill*, with the greatest composure in the world, and with all the familiarity of an intimate, leaning towards the lady's shoulder, said : ‘ I could not but observe the particular pleasure you express'd at the beginning of the second line of this song. I dont know that it has been observ'd before you remark'd it, but there is a peculiar merit in the composer in that part, who has in a masterly manner made the irregularity

‘ regularity of the verse, which would  
 ‘ have disconcerted the passage in the  
 ‘ hands of any body but himself, the oc-  
 ‘ casion of a peculiar grace.’

Lady Juliet, who had hitherto receiv’d this gentleman’s addresses only in dumb shew, and who did not yet perfectly comprehend the observation he was making, look’d round upon him with a pleasure and astonishment in her countenance, that all her premeditated government of herself could not guard her against : she attended to him with a trembling heart, a steadfast eye, and a mouth that seem’d opening as if to eat up every syllable he utter’d ; and the captain’s face expressing no other sentiments but those of an uneasy confusion, Loveill address’d the remainder of his criticism to him. ‘ I believe, Sir, continu-  
 ‘ ed he, this peculiar passage did not hap-  
 ‘ pen to strike you ; but I saw that lady  
 ‘ remark it with a particular look of ap-  
 ‘ plaufe. You have observ’d, I dare say,  
 ‘ that all these sprightly pieces in the En-  
 ‘ glish poets are founded on the basis of  
 ‘ the Anacreontick, and that their be-  
 ‘ ginning with a long syllable, as in the  
 ‘ lines

*Let me wander not unseen.*

-----

*Where*



*Where the plowman near at hand,  
Whistles o'er the fallowed land;  
And the milkmaid singeth blythe,  
And the mower whets his scythe.*

-----

*Under the hawthorn in the dale.*

' is evidently done in imitation of the measure of the Greek verse; but the inaccuracy of the authors in our language, (not excepting even Milton himself in the elegant piece before us) is so great that they frequently forget the measure, and intermix verses not Anacreontick among the others: such are the two lines I omitted in repeating this piece

*By hedge-row elms on billocks green.  
And every shepherd tells his tale.*

' Where it is evident, the lines not only consist of half a foot too much, but that half-foot is the short syllable added at the beginning of the line, the dropping of which gives the peculiar character of Anacreontism to the rest. We have a way of slurring over this first half-foot in the reading, in such a manner as to hide the redundance in a great measure; but when the words are intended for musick the composer generally rally

rally hobbles at it. He adapts his measure to the first line, which is generally a right one, and taking it for granted that the rest are all like it, in so material a point as the number of syllables, he is not prepared for the variety, but usually passes it by, and leaves the vocal performer to get over it as well as he can.

I dont doubt but an ear of the delicacy of this lady's has been often shock'd at the huddling together of two syllables to the same note on these occasions, and cannot wonder that she expressed a peculiar pleasure at the manner in which the composer of this piece has made a beauty out of this very fault, by giving an additional note to the beginning of the second line to take up the short syllable, and this not appearing crowded in by force, but absolutely expected and necessary from the conduct of the close on the line before. His management in regard to the other redundant line, is far from being censurable, but in this it certainly deserves all the applause that lady allows it.

The captain was not a little out of countenance at hearing a remark that fell so immediately in his own way, so well delivered

vered by another; nor could he indeed easily bring himself to brook the triumph, with which Loveill had taken occasion to tell him of his not perceiving the occasion of it. *Lady Juliet* was charmed beyond measure with this confirmation of the justice of the good opinion she had conceived of her new lover, who had casually and in a slight, extempore, and merely occasional remark, discovered such a delicacy of taste in the polite arts, and such masterly knowledge in learning and antiquity. This however was not all the merit of what he had been saying, the greatest pleasure to her was in the address, with which he had contriv'd to give herself the merit of the observation, tho' she was very conscious, not only that she had never perceiv'd any thing of the matter, but that he very well knew it.

Such a proof of genius in a man, who at this time appear'd to want some person of figure to countenance him, would on any other occasion have commanded an immediate friendship in a man of the captain's truly generous and humane disposition; but the rival here could allow no place for the friend. He affected to pass over the observation as trivial; and scarce gave an answer to it. The lady was silent a long time, but that was from another cause;

cause ; at length, when the captain's complimenting somebody that spoke to him gave her a moment's opportunity, she with a very expressive look told Mr. Loveill :  
 ' Sir, you are sensible how much I say,  
 ' when I tell you your tongue has more  
 ' eloquence than your eyes. But . . .

The raptures with which the lover heard this compliment were considerably abated by the abrupt conclusion of it. He was not certain what sort of connexion there was between her and the captain ; and he grew more alarmed as he perceiv'd the extream caution with which she always acted before him. The look that spoke the conclusion of the broken sentence, at the captain's turning that way, sufficiently declared her unwillingness that he should perceive the state of the thoughts ; and the lover understood it so well, that he parted from her with as little ceremony as they had met, and applied himself with the same easy familiarity to the next person he came up to.

Many goodnatur'd looks pass'd between Lady Juliet and her new lover, during the remainder of the morning, but the captain kept so good a guard that there was no opportunity of farther conversation ; only the lover quite desperate, just as they were crowding out of the door  
 press'd



press'd her hand with great tenderness, and whisper'd with the utmost discomposure of voice : ' Only tell me that you ' are not married.' The lady answer'd, ' I am not.' And on the instant gave her hand to the captain, who went off with her in some sort of triumph.

### C H A P. VIII.

*A conversation between Mr. Loveill and Lady Juliet.—Captain Taste attacks her in a new suit.—Matters fluctuate between him and Loveill a long time.—Victory at length declares herself in favour of the greater beau.*

**J**Ealousy has Chamaleon's eyes that turn round in their sockets, and can look behind them while the head is carried strait forwards. The captain who had lov'd in no moderate degree lay open to this passion in the same excess; and tho' his pride made him affect to overlook and contemn so mean a rival, as the plainness of mr. Loveill's habit made him appear to be; yet he could not but look twenty ways at once when ever this enemy to his pretensions was in sight, and attend  
with

with the utmost caution to every whisper that passed about him.

The impatience of Loveill's desire to know the grand point with regard to Lady Juliet, and the eagerness of his very difficultly bridled passion, had betrayed him into an earnestness in his last address to her that a man much less upon his guard than the captain could not have missed discovering the occasion of; and though the lady had been so much more upon her guard, that this suspicious lover had not been able to make out the nature of her answer, yet he easily found that there was nothing of resentment in it, and that there was at least no offence taken on her part at an advance that a woman of her discernment could not misunderstand.

He found occasion enough of uneasiness in all this; and the lady's thoughts being not less taken up in a manner very foreign to his advantage; they were but very dull company for one another as he waited on her home from this morning's entertainment. A very slight excuse was sufficient to separate two people who now for the first time heartily wished to be rid of each other's company: the lover took his leave at the door, in order to retire for a little serious consideration, and the lady found herself at liberty to indulge her reveries in regard

regard to Loveill to the utmost.

The captain came to the short resolution of cutting his rival's throat, and accordingly pen'd a very angry epistle to him which he intended should be understood as a challenge ; but the porter who was commissioned with the delivering it not finding the gentleman at home and consequently bringing it back, the lovers anger cooled before he found another opportunity of sending it, and the matter went no farther. The lady's thoughts on the other hand could not find any so easy determination, she revolv'd seriously the plan of marrying that she had proposed to herself, and which she found it absolutely necessary for her to be in earnest about. The captain appeared the fittest man in the world for this purpose, and Loveill by all that she could yet see one of the unfittest, however she had given a loose to so many good natured thoughts about him before she knew so much of him, that upon the whole the ballance was turning in his favour.

Dinner had during the lady's reverie on this interesting subject, been served up ; but she was too full of love to have any room for food. The table was scarce cleared when a rap at the door proclaimed a visiter coming up. Lady Juliet who was not in a humour to change the subject of her

her contemplation, had peevishly called out to her servant, *I am at home to no body*, when to her astonishment Mr. Loveill appeared in sight. He heard the commands she had just delivered, but he saw something in her face at his approach that was so little of kin to them, that he pretended not to have heard her, and walked in very unconcernedly.

The confusion that this visit had thrown lady Juliet into, gave the lover an opportunity of dwelling a little longer upon the salute he had given her at his entrance, than the rules of the strictest decorum would warrant: he could not think it was his business to desist from so charming an employment till she was pleas'd to give the signal for it; and the surprize or some other cause, had kept her motionless till their lips had mutually made a very intimate acquaintance by a much more expressive language than the ordinary one of speaking. The lady at length recovering from this agreeable trance started back, and with a glow of red over her whole face, that gave a new lustre to her charms, softly reproached both herself and him on the occasion, and ask'd him: 'how he dar'd to think of using such a freedom with her?' The lover with a politely affected confusion, told her that he had, no more than herself, re-

VOL. I. F member'd



member'd what he was doing—that it was not easy, in a moment of such transport, to recollect the servile laws of formality. ‘Any thing (continued he, gently pressing her hand) in which you are concern’d, is to be purchas’d at the expence of all rules but those of your own prescribing’—Mr. Loveill was going on in a very pathetick manner, when the lady, with an unwillingness which she either could not or would not hide, gently withdrew her hand from him, and with an enchanting mixture of a smile and a frown told him, ‘the first law I prescribe, Sir, is a somewhat greater distance.’ The lover, who did not think it his business to distinguish how far the phrase ‘somewhat greater’ extended, tho’ he with great reluctance parted with her hand, yet kept his post. The lady sat down in some confusion, and began to apologize for the early freedom she had admitted him to; with ‘I don’t know what you’ll think of me for this, but’—When the gallant lover interrupted her, and very artfully taking the whole blame upon himself told her, ‘I can’t conceive, madam, that you have any pretension to the occasion of the apology I see you are going to make—What of all this most terrible freedom that shocks your nicety so much, is there that I have not the sole right in? Is there

‘ there any thing you have done in it? I  
 ‘ declare no—and upon my soul and ho-  
 ‘ nour I have a hearty mind to bring you  
 ‘ in guilty. I have taken hearty pains to  
 ‘ find the least shadow of it about you;  
 ‘ but to my no little confusion, in vain.’

Loveill who never fail’d of reading the heart of a woman in her eyes, if she had any expression there, perceived that he had carried this too far, and that the lady began to be a little touch’d, and to suspect all he was saying of raillery. She was opening the most delicate lips that nature ever form’d, to reply to him; but he thought it most prudent to answer the objection before she made it, by continuing his discourse: ‘ You’ll pardon me, lady Juliet! said he, but I can’t help remem-  
 ‘ bring myself infinitely oblig’d to cap-  
 ‘ tain Taste on this occasion. I know you  
 ‘ will allow I don’t stretch the obligation at  
 ‘ all too much, when I lay not only every  
 ‘ thing I have ventured to say to you,  
 ‘ but even all the imaginary countenance  
 ‘ you are accusing yourself for having gi-  
 ‘ ven me, wholly at his door. Moments,  
 ‘ of which there are very few, are too  
 ‘ precious to give room for ceremony;  
 ‘ and I know very well, that but for that  
 ‘ gentleman’s watching so strictly over e-  
 ‘ very thing that concern’d you, neither  
 F 2 ‘ should

‘ should I have dar’d to speak to you on  
‘ this subject, nor would you have heard  
‘ me.’

‘ ’Tis my interest, reply’d Lady Juliet  
very sharply, ‘ to believe there is a great  
‘ deal of truth in all this; but I cannot  
‘ but smile to think how modest a use you  
‘ have been pleas’d to make of one of the  
‘ most accomplished men of the age,  
‘ and how prettily he would look upon  
‘ you, if he could hear you tell me of it.—But  
‘ to set all this aside, pray mr. Loveill,  
‘ continued she, how came I by the honour  
‘ of this visit?

‘ Come, come Lady Juliet, (replied the  
lover, once more seizing her hand, and  
confirm’d by an unlucky sigh that could  
not be suppress’d during her struggle to  
get it away, that she had no real mind he  
should part with it,) ‘ ’tis pretty plain  
‘ you and I may deceive every body but  
‘ one another; but ’tis a jest to trifle with  
‘ ourselves. ’Tis plain enough that you have  
‘ more charms about you than any body else,  
‘ and that I have convinc’d myself very  
‘ heartily that it is so. You have no right  
‘ to be offended at my seeing this; and I  
‘ know you would think very contempti-  
‘ bly of the man who could let another that  
‘ had any thing less than a legal right to  
‘ you, deter him from telling you so.’

The

The spirit of this reply, added to the unaffected politeness of every thing else that this new lover had said to Lady Juliet, convinced her that there was a great deal more in him than appeared to the eye; and tho' she was not a little vex'd at being thus compell'd into an amour as it were whether she would or no, and that at the expence of so valuable a lover as the captain (for she easily saw that would inevitably be the case) her heart became more and more an advocate for it, and in short the consequence of half a dozen more unanswerable compliments from Mr. Loveill was that the rest of the afternoon was spent in an avowed courtship.

Toward evening Lady Juliet, who had some reason to expect she should have a visit from the captain, and was not at all at ease about their meeting there, told Mr. Loveill with a smile, ' I see you have no  
' mind to make an end of your visit; but  
' you must give me leave to dress for the  
' rooms—The lover answer'd, you don't  
' think I'm in the wrong; and indeed I  
' have no right to think you are—Madam  
' I enter upon an hour or two of more un-  
' easiness than ever you will be acquainted  
' with as long as you live.'--Mr. Loveill who took his leave with these words, thought he read something in the lady's cheeks



that deny'd the truth of them: he went home not a little satisfied with the reception he had met with; and the lady had manag'd so extremely well that he was scarce out of sight when the captain who had pass'd his time very disagreeably since the morning came up to the door.

Lady Juliet who had seen him coming, and whose thoughts were at this time a little too much confus'd to give her leave to entertain him properly; had got into her dressing room before he arriv'd at the door, and while he kill'd the time in which he waited for her, with criticising, not with the greatest good nature in the world, on a modern tragedy that was just then come out, and lay in the window; the lady was employ'd in thoughts that he would not have been at all the easier for knowing.

Lady Juliet, who knew very well that the captain would want to talk upon a subject which she was not at all prepar'd at that time to come to an explanation about, took care not to be dress'd till it was high time to go to the rooms; so that the angry lover had no opportunity to call her to an account for this time. He waited on her to the rooms, said a great many civil things about her complexion, and seem'd in pretty tolerable favour, and in very good humour when the formidable *Loveill* had

had espy'd them, and was making up to Lady Juliet with great familiarity. The lady who had not yet come to an absolute resolution of parting with the captain, but had determin'd to allot one hour's serious thought to it first, met his eyes with a forbidding glance that sent him off to somebody else; and this chanc'd to be to a woman, she could so little bear to see any civilities from him to that she almost quarrell'd with herself for not sacrificing all to prevent it.

Loveill, tho' not a little mortified about it, found it was the lady's pleasure that he should keep his distance the whole evening; and however reluctantly it might be, yet he perfectly obey'd her. Some advances he made the next day in a morning visit, made him considerable reparation for this; but in the evening all appear'd lost again: The captain who had determin'd instead of attacking the rival's heart with his sword, to surprize the lady's with a new suit of cloaths of a very showy kind, succeeded so well in it, that Lady Juliet, when she saw him enter the rooms in all this splendor, could not command herself; but though she before had been saying some very civil things to Loveill who had come in with her, she left him with a look of contempt at the sight of this powerful rival; and could not help toward the close of the

F 4

evening

evening proposing the fine captain as a model to his rival, and telling him that she could not but be amaz'd that a man so capable of making a figure in life as he was, should dress himself like a tradesman.

The captain, who was present at this taunting admonition could not keep the pride of his triumph within bounds; but on his provoking his rival with some arrogant airs about it, he was not a little mortified by the just severity with which Loveill attack'd the lady's understanding, for betraying her into the liking a man for the merit of his taylor. After some very satyrical things on the same subject, this cunning lover, when he saw he had rais'd the lady's passion pretty high, had the address to let it gently down again, by concluding with telling her. ' This, ma-  
' dam, I confess has been always my opi-  
' nion: but I am sensible I have been in  
' the wrong. The ladies are the best  
' judges of a thing, in which themselves a-  
' lone, are concern'd; for I would not believe  
' any man dresses to please himself.' He cast a very contemptuous look on the captain as he spoke this, and continued: ' As  
' I intend to marry, I am very happy,  
' madam, in knowing the sense of the  
' sex I have to please, from so good an  
' authority. I could have wish'd to ap-  
pear

‘pear in the habit of a man of sense,  
 ‘but since you determine otherwise for  
 ‘me, you shall see how very easily such  
 ‘sort of merit is put on.’

The lady was a good deal hurt by the severity of this reply, but the captain gave no credit to the threatening it concluded with; he knew very well how awkward a man generally looks in finery that he is not us’d to, and while he saw the good effect of his own dress on the lady, he could not help indulging the thought of the contemptible figure his rival was to make in attempting to imitate it. The event came on sooner than was expected: The artful Loveill, who saw plainly enough that he was not wholly indifferent to lady Juliet, notwithstanding all the oddities of her temper, and who had kept off two days to alarm her a little with a pretended indifference; appear’d on the third evening in the rooms in a suit that made his rival’s finery contemptible: as he could assume more characters than one, he had taken care to alter his whole address and manner with his cloaths; and plainly appeared not only the greatest beau in the place, but the man most cut out to be a beau of any body in the world.

The captain who had flatter’d himself with some very different expectations on



this subject, was thoroughly mortified to see a man for his rival, whom he could not but acknowledge superior to himself even in his favourite perfection. The new beau addressing himself to the lady with redoubled spirit and politeness, she now receiv'd him with the utmost freedom and familiarity even before the captain's face, and perfectly convinc'd that he was in reality a man of consequence, for whatever odd reason he might have chosen at first to appear in disguise, she frankly told him when he in raillery press'd her to give her opinion of the metamorphosis she had made in him; ' Sir, there wanted only this to every body's acknowledging mr. Loveill (if you chuse to be call'd so still) the most accomplish'd man of the age.'

The company who did not at first know Loveill in his new garb, soon discover'd that he was now in his proper sphere, and concluded that the other was but an assumed character. Lady Juliet who had treasur'd up in her memory the acknowledgment he had made that he intended to marry, and the artful manner in which he had occasionally thrown in the design he had upon herself, was now convinc'd in her own mind that he was not only a proper match for her, but that he fully purpos'd the marrying her immediately; and as the  
great

great point was now determin'd, whether she should or should not give up the captain, she behav'd to him with a coldness, which added to her declaration in favour of Mr. Loveill made before his face, plainly convinc'd him that she had determin'd to discard him.

## C H A P. IX.

*Captain Taste takes his final leave of Lady Juliet—Mr. Loveill and she come to an explanation—A new character interrupts the whole business.*

**T**HE gallant captain had now a new scene to act in: however often it had happen'd to him to betray and abandon the credulous part of the other sex; this was the first time he had found the tables turn'd upon him, and seen himself thrown off.

The favourable opinion he had hitherto with justice enough retain'd of himself, both as to his figure and understanding; added not a little to the mortification he received on this occasion, he could not but find by this event, that all the world did not think quite so well of him as he did of himself, since he was evidently discarded in this case not for any crime, or offence of his

his own ; but merely to make room for a worthier admirer, and that, to add to the mortification, a man whom he had been us'd to look down upon with some degree of contempt.

The first emotions of his passion would have dictated to him a challenge to the happy rival, and a reproach to the lady in the words of Bajazet.

*So grateful is your idol dear variety,  
That for another love you would foregoe  
An angel's form to mingle with the devils.*

But prudence and a new born modesty, suppress'd both these effects of his indignation ; and the result of a more mature deliberation, was only that he should not stay for the scandal of a second flight from the inconstant fair, but break his chain at the first affront, and shew the proper resentment by declining both the objects of his uneasiness as unworthy his farther consideration.

Loveill was indulging a happy *tête à tête* at breakfast in *Lady Juliet's* lodgings the next morning, when the effect of this final decision of the captain's appeared in a short and somewhat angry letter, in which he told the lady, that when he remember'd the multitude she had jilted before, he  
could

could not pretend to be angry at his own fortune as particular, and that he hop'd she would have the happiness of continuing for ever this kind of conquests: he wish'd his successful rival a happy week with her, and took his final leave in those favourite lines in the Fair Penitent:

*All the heaven you wish for is variety.—  
One lover to another still succeeds,  
Another, and another after that,  
And the last fool is welcome as the former;  
Till having lov'd his hour out, he gives place  
And mingles with the herd that went before  
him.*

The lady, to give the new favourite a more absolute triumph, read the letter aloud to him, and concluded with an affected laugh and a theatrical pronounciation of, *Can there be such, and have they peace of mind?* what think you mr. Loveill continued she, has a fellow, because I have once given him leave to affront me with a fulsome compliment, a right to complain that I don't let him enjoy the troublesome liberty as long as he lives? The happy Loveill could only answer this question with a smile of approbation: he had too much discernment not to see that all this raillery and indifference were affected, but as they were affected solely in his favour, he had the complaisance



fance to like them as well as if he believ'd them the sincerest truths in the world.

This gentleman had before boasted of having *used* the captain in his amour; but he now found means of making him assist the promoting his success in a much more eminent manner. A woman is never so well in humour to receive addresses from one man, as when she is thoroughly provok'd at another. The subtle lover she had now to deal with, soon saw that in spite of all her affected unconcern, the captain's revolt had truly mortify'd her; he took care to set this in its very worst light, and to represent in opposition to it, a sort of conduct which he thought a man who had ever truly lov'd a woman, would have given into.

He exaggerated all the exceptionable parts of the late rival's turn in other respects, his pride, jealousy, and whatever else could be muster'd up as objections to a woman's living well with him; and in fine, as he found means to bring the lady thoroughly into his opinion all the way, he proceeded at last to attack his general character, and pick out faults in every thing that people had been used to admire in him. The merit of his dress he gave to the fancy of the taylor; that of his wit to some coffee-house genius, from whom

whom he had occasionally pick'd it up, to retail at second hand; and his love for poetry he banter'd on the same score, insisting on it that no man could have a true taste for that, who was not an author himself.

In short the poor captain, as he was on this occasion turn'd out of this artful rival's hands, appear'd like the daw of Æsop strip'd of the peacock's feathers: Loveill himself was indeed very conscious that the captain deserv'd extremely little of this severity; but as the succeeding in his addresses to *Lady Juliet*, was a thing of very serious consequence to him, and as he knew he had nothing to dread so much in this respect as a relapse of the lady, in favour of this rival, he had determin'd to build his fortune wholly on the ruins of the others: and had contriv'd so cunningly to interest the lady's passions in the first part of his censure, and to make the rest seem the dictates of her own judgment rather than of his, that the design wholly succeeded; and no change of fortune could ever have restor'd the captain to her good graces.

The appearance Loveill made in his new character, alarm'd every body in this talking place: had he given the generality of the company no other cause of quarrel, his superior figure and address, would have now  
set

set him up as the butt of general scandal : but he had added to this the contempt of all the female world, by his attachment to one particular charmer, and that the very person of the whole sex whom they all hated to destruction.

He now appeared every where with Lady Juliet ; and she seem'd to triumph in shewing him a peculiar favour and countenance. It had so happen'd that her quality and fortune were given up as unexceptionable ; but this was far from being the case with regard to Loveill's, the easy figure he made in his gay dress, convinced people that he was now in his proper character, and that of consequence the opposite one in which he had first appear'd had been an assumed one : This evident truth was charge enough against him ; and it was at once concluded from this, that he was an impostor. Some declared him a gamester, others a fortune-hunter, and both these opinions would have gain'd ground, but that it was observed he never play'd, and that he had made no addressees of the love kind, to any body but the envy'd lady he now courted, whose very enemies could not but allow, that her fortune was the least desirable thing belonging to her ; and that her understanding was such, as would deter any man who had common sense, and  
who

who was on that scheme from attempting her. Not an evening but people were provoked by Loveill's success with Lady Juliet, and not an opportunity of enquiring about him, but was prosecuted to the utmost; though all to little purpose. He was every day seen conversing with great familiarity with people of the first fashion, but all that could be learned by enquiries from them about him was, that they had continually met him in publick, and upon visits.

Lady Juliet was not without an inquisitiveness of the same kind, and that indeed on a better foundation than the rest of the company; but the pleasure she could not help taking in her lover's company, and the dread of an unlucky discovery in point of fortune, made her industriously put off all occasions of speaking on such a subject.

Every thing conspired to render this fortunate pair as happy as love under its most advantageous circumstances could make them. A real passion on both sides, and that in two people the most susceptible of it in its utmost refinements, and who seem'd of all the world the man and woman cut out for one another, gave them a mutual and uninterrupted pleasure, such as neither of them could have enjoy'd with any body else; and such indeed as no body  
of



# 114 The ADVENTURES of

of less delicate sentiments could have enjoy'd with either of them. Every hour was an hour of transport, the lover admir'd the lady's wit, the lady the lover's judgment, and neither could meet with any thing great, or amiable but in the other.

It is no wonder that even the deeper subtilty of the lover, as well as Lady Juliet's was brib'd off by such exalted pleasures as these, to defer the enquiry into any thing that might affect them, or endanger their continuance. In effect it is much to be doubted whether either of the innamorato's would ever have thought it necessary to enquire into so material a point as the circumstances of the other, while they had sixpence left between them. Their common enemies had attempted a thousand ways to hint ill things of them to one another in this respect; but these had all been received as they deserv'd; the mischief however that malice could not arrive at, friendship at last accidentally did.

The lovers had pass'd about a month in this joyous way, when a friend of Loveill's who happen'd to know too much of both of them for their repose, arriv'd at Bath. This gentleman, as he was very well acquainted with Loveill's scheme, could not but give him joy of his success in it; and

as

as he had some knowledge also of the lady's affairs, told him that he had been the happiest fellow under heaven, to pitch upon so charming a creature with ten thousand pound in her pocket. Loveill, who had always dreaded to hear any thing on this subject, turn'd pale at this declaration: he made shift to recover his confusion however, time enough to prevent an explanation upon the subject of it; and the visit terminated in his friend's advising him to marry her immediately if possible, to prevent accidents.

Lady Juliet could not but observe the next morning on her meeting her lover in the pump-room, the first cloud of care she had seen upon his brow since their acquaintance. She enquir'd into the occasion of it, with the utmost concern and tenderness, and when she found it was not a subject to be talk'd of in a publick place she gave him the signal to attend her home.

Fear kept her mute when they were sat down together, but tears more eloquent than words could have been, pleaded for her, and seem'd to tell him, that the terror of imagining any thing that gave him uneasiness, was such as could not leave her room to fear the hearing what it was that did so.

‘ There is a subject, dearest lady Juliet, said  
‘ Loveill,

‘ Loveill, which we both have always  
‘ dreaded to enquire into—But it is idle in  
‘ us to deceive ourselves—My determin’d  
‘ intention has been to marry—My whole  
‘ business at this place, has been to chuse  
‘ out a proper person—I attempted to pass  
‘ unobserved among people, till I had ex-  
‘ amin’d the women, in order to make  
‘ my choice with prudence—Why should  
‘ I tell you, you took from me the power  
‘ of chusing?—How happy it were pos-  
‘ sible for me to be with you, you well  
‘ know—but the result is—that we cannot  
‘ be so.— my fortune is too small for a life  
‘ of splendour: and I learn now that yours is  
‘ so too—It is necessary that you should mar-  
‘ ry prudently, and that I must not mar-  
‘ ry at all. Had either, or had both our  
‘ fortunes been enough to support the rank  
‘ you are cut out to shine in, we had been  
‘ happy, but my five thousand pound and  
‘ your ten are nothing—I have determi-  
‘ ned, concluded he, rather to see you  
‘ marry’d to another, than to attempt the  
‘ making you less happy than you de-  
‘ serve, and have a right to be.’

The real distress of *Lady Juliet* in this affecting scene, needed no art to heighten its appearance. She was silent for some moments—At length with many interrupting sighs, she told him her whole story—  
confess’d

confess'd the real state of her fortune, and the scheme with which she had set out to mend it, and concluded with telling him: 'This  
' Sir, perhaps it is not too much vanity to  
' think I might have effected with captain  
' Taste; nor can I suppose that I shall not  
' have more opportunities of it;—but, con-  
' tinued she, mr. Loveill (laying her hand  
' upon his) take my whole soul — know  
' I can prefer obscurity with you, to splen-  
' dour. I will not suppose you mercenary,  
' or that my imaginary fortune had any  
' more charms for you, than your's has  
' had for me, if you dare accept me as I  
' am—you may.'

Loveill, who had an unfeign'd passion for this charming creature, was transported at so noble a proof of her entertaining as generous and disinterested a one for him. His most eloquent answer was an oft-repeated kiss, but when her delicacy would suffer no more of that, he told her, nothing could so perfectly fall in with his scheme as this generous offer: that his business was not to seek out a rich wife, but an agreeable one: one with whom he should be happy. ' My happiness is cer-  
' tain on this foundation, continued he :  
' 'tis only your's I am in fear for—How  
' you will be easy under a condition that  
' is so different from what you had pro-  
' pos'd



‘ pos’d as your scheme of pleasure, I dread  
 ‘ to think of.—I am strongly press’d to  
 ‘ urge you to keep your word with me  
 ‘ this moment: but you shall think more  
 ‘ coolly of it first. I cannot fear your ge-  
 ‘ nerosity—But till you can tell me after a  
 ‘ week’s serious thought, that you still be-  
 ‘ lieve you can take me in the place of e-  
 ‘ very thing that is usually dear to women,  
 ‘ I will not hazard that happiness, which  
 ‘ is much more valuable to me than my  
 ‘ own, by fixing you for ever to what you  
 ‘ may repent of.’

The noble generosity of this offer, had  
 a stronger effect on Lady Juliet’s heart,  
 than every thing she had before ad-  
 mir’d in her lover. She triumph’d in the  
 security her heart gave her, that he should  
 not repent so noble a confidence; and  
 for the week of this probation they be-  
 hav’d with a freedom even in publick, that  
 told all the world it was now too late to  
 think of parting them.

Among the several amusements beside  
 the usual ones of the place, with which our  
 expecting lovers kill’d this tedious time,  
 one was a party of pleasure to a neigh-  
 bouring village, remarkable for its pleasant  
 situation. In the way to this place, they pas-  
 sed by the side of a little brook, at an ob-  
 scure corner of which, it was the fortune  
 of

of Lady Juliet as she was gazing at the prospect, to descry a figure which call'd up all her attention. At first, while the object was at a considerable distance, she had mistaken it for a scare-crow, fix'd upon a pole to frighten the birds from somebody's corn fields; but as the coach afterwards by a sudden turn of a corner, brought them directly upon it, she was startled beyond measure to find that it was animated. The eyes indeed were the only part about it that moved, but these turn'd so continually about in their sockets, that there was no room to doubt but the rest of the stock had some sort of life in it, though it did not just then think proper to exert any tokens of it.

The figure was that of a round fac'd, ruddy, handsome fellow, who seem'd to have grown corpulent with very ease; and whose person was ornamented with a pink-colour'd flower'd velvet coat, and a milk white periwig. The remarkable personage our company chanc'd in this manner to stumble upon was at this time upon a visit to a gentleman in the neighbourhood; but he had declin'd going to Bath with him that morning, for the superior pleasure of fishing with a crooked pin for sticklebacks under the stump of an old willow. Little did this gentleman think that he should have

have his own heart caught in the expedition; and as little did the lady think that his present motionless condition was no other than a state of admiration at her charms; and much less that the rolling of his eyes was his way of ogling her.

Lady Juliet could not suppress her impatience to know who this important gentleman was, and Loveill gave her his history in the following words.

## CHAP. X.

*The history of Mr. Dupy—A memorable trial at Rome, in consequence of which, that gentleman sets sail for England.*

THE story of a man whose particular character is, that his whole life has been one continued vacancy, may be deliver'd you madam said Loveill, in a very small compass. I give you this preface as the only apology for taking up your time about him at all.

The name of the egregious gentleman you see there is *Dupy*. Different sets of people from what has appear'd to these particular concerns most striking about him, have

have added various epithets to this appellation, though in itself sufficiently expressive. The two principal are those of *handsome Dupy* among the women, and *fool Dupy* among his own sex.

The most eminent qualifications of this gentleman are an empty head, and five thousand pounds a year. With these recommendations a person of your ladyship's penetration, will not wonder that he has been very well receiv'd among at least nine tenths of the world. His beauty is the estate of half the women of the town who ever saw him, as they are always well paid for praising it; and his estate is the common fortune of all his acquaintance.

St. Martin has been celebrated for giving the half of his coat to a stranger that wanted it, but the superior benevolence of *Mr. Dupy* will give all his to a man whether he wants it or no.

It is a general rule among people that know any thing of him, that if *Dupy* is at the tavern, no man need pay his reckoning; if *Dupy* is at cards, 'tis every man's fault that loses; and if he has two shirts, 'tis the man's own fault that wants one.

Among the women *Dupy* is always secure of a favourable reception, and his purse is always as sure to pay for it. If a common creature is in distress for twenty



pounds, it is but telling him he has the finest white and red of any man in the universe, and he throws it into her lap; and if a woman of character wants a new gown which the niggardly father, guardian, or husband denies her, it is but challenging him at piquet, and telling him that a lady of her acquaintance is desperately in love with him, and the business is done: The head which in its soberest moments could scarce count ten, is so bewilder'd with the expectations it forms from the new conquest it hears of; that the fair antagonist can have nothing to complain of, but that she wins the money without the pleasure of cheating.

Among the men if there are any parties with whom this gentleman's money will not recommend him, his absurdity will never fail of success with them. 'Tis a sort of compliment that every body is apt to pay to his own understanding, to look down with pleasure upon the foibles of another: on this score the gayest, the sprightliest, nay the sensiblest societies of men have admitted *Duppy* among them, and the wisest and wittiest people of the nation, have been found extremely happy in his company, while they have us'd him as a foil, or as a butt for many hours together.

Mr.

*Mr. Dupy* has had nothing wanting in his education: though he has so contriv'd it as to retain at this moderate distance of time no tincture of any education at all. He has had his masters in all the sciences; has gone through his studies; and has made the tour of Europe: the consequence of all which is that he reads as well, and dances, and fences as well, and knows at least as much of the world, as he did before he began.

I ought to make a great many apologies madam, continued Loveill, for entering any farther into the particulars of so insignificant a character: but as I have occasionally mentioned his tour of Europe, you must give me leave to sum up his encomiums, by one egregious instance of his genius and penetration, which happen'd during that period of his existence.

A man of *Mr. Dupy's* taste for the politer arts, could no more miss *Rome* in his travells, than a modern beau a masquerade at Marybone. The first subject of his enquiry at his arrival in that city was, what other people of fashion of this nation were there at that time: an Englishman every where except in England takes notice of his countrymen: he immediately demanded an acquaintance among such of them as he found there, and as fortune

would have it those whom he had particularly attach'd himself to, were three or four of the greatest genius's that the nation perhaps ever produced. The use he was of to these gay people was infinite. If they ran too great lengths in their expences, *Dupy* was their cashier, till the next remittances; if they were at any time riotous *Dupy* bore the censure of the magistracy; if they bought any thing and were afterwards displeased with it *Dupy* took it off their hands; and if a message was to be sent that there was some danger of a man's having his throat cut about, *Dupy* was always the man commissioned to deliver it.

Matters had gone on thus swimmingly a long time, when this useful gentleman had one day succeeded so well in a desperate attack on the handsome mistress of a man of some consequence, as to bring her clear off. He was with his usual complaisance conducting the lady to his jovial friends, when she stopp'd suddenly on passing by a certain house and telling him, that a particular friend of her's liv'd there desired him to go in with her.

The cunning courtezan had soon discover'd that this gentleman, though he had the honour only to be employ'd in procuring for his friends, was a much fitter lover for all her purposes, than a set of mad fellows

fellows, who had much less money and much more discernment about them. She had no sooner seated him on a couch, than she plac'd herself very familiarly by him, and explain'd to him the honourable office he had been so long employ'd in, and had so well executed, though he never seem'd at all to understand it before.

The lady succeeded. The enlighten'd *Mr. Dupy* left his friends in the lurch; and it was not till after three or four days, that they could discover what was become either of the beau or the lady, though they were very sensible that he had carried her off.

It was a settled point with them toward the end of this time that they had lost both their friend and their mistress, by the vengeance of the Italian keeper; who they took it for granted had found out their design and had them both ponyarded.

Their lamentations for their unlucky friend were almost over, when one of the company strolling into some before unknown houses of recreation, to his amazement popp'd upon *Dupy* and his mistress, in a happy *tête à tête* over a dish of tea. When the mutual congratulations were over between them, the gallant visiter proceeded in the old way to demand the lady; but was he thunder-struck with the answer of



the fair one which was very short, but contain'd a great deal of meaning and was, 'Sir the gentleman is not tir'd of me himself yet.'

The pertness of this reply doubl'd the charms of the lady in the less fortunate lover's heart; he return'd to his acquaintance and told them the adventure. The resolution of the whole body on it was, that *Dupy* must be removed till they had had as much of the lady as they lik'd, after which they knew she would be full as proper for him as at present. This resolution was taken in a place where of all others troublesome people are most easily removed; but our jovial company had no mind to hurt so useful and honest a fellow as *Dupy*, though they heartily wish'd him a little out of the way for the present.

After many proposals made by the several members of this club of rivals, the resolution at length concluded upon was, that as *Dupy* might be made to believe any thing, there needed nothing but his own folly properly work'd upon to immure him as long as they pleas'd. To resolve a thing and to do it with such genius's as those concern'd in this scheme, is almost the same thing. They immediately visited their friend in a body; took him abroad with them; join'd company at one  
of

of the publick places, with a gentleman famous at that time for cultivating acquaintances with every thing that came from England, and took occasion to drop away one by one and leave him and this new a friend alone together.

The civilities of this gentleman who very well knew that *Mr. Dupy* must be somebody of consequence by the company he had seen him in, won the heart of our simple hero at once: they din'd together; visited in the afternoon together; and in the evening sat in the same box at the opera. *Dupy* who flatter'd himself that he knew very well what he had to suspect from his friends civilities, had prudently removed the lady before he went out with them; and it was no common pleasure to him to find at his return, that none of them had been seen about the house. The dread that he had conceived of their plots against him, had affected him so deeply, that the joy that succeeded the finding they were without foundation, gave him the happiest night he had ever pass'd in his life.

The morning prov'd a little more unlucky to him. Three hours before he would have got up, the gentleman of the party who was able to keep the most steady countenance enter'd his room, and approaching the bed-side with a face as long

as one's arm, said, ' Mr. Dupy, I enter  
 ' here without ceremony—the occasion of  
 ' my coming to you is of too pressing a na-  
 ' ture to admit of forms—Pray how came  
 ' you to leave us yesterday?—Do you  
 ' know that the person you join'd company  
 ' with, is no other than the chevalier's se-  
 ' cretary?—Sir, your having been seen in  
 ' publick with him, is construed no other-  
 ' wise than treason—you are inform'd a-  
 ' gainst, and I think you have nothing left  
 ' but to fly for it.'

The unfortunate *Dupy* fainted away, be-  
 fore the sorrowful visiter had finished his  
 last sentence : when he recover'd, he got  
 out of bed and falling on his knees to his  
 dear friend, protested his innocence, and  
 his ignorance of the person he had been  
 seen with; and beg'd him to intercede with  
 the rest, to see if nothing could be done  
 to clear him. It was with some difficulty  
 that the gentleman to whom this entreaty  
 was address'd, preserved his countenance;  
 too much however depended upon the e-  
 vent of the scheme, for him to sacrifice it  
 for a laugh: he very gravely answered—  
 ' Mr. Dupy you know the friendship I  
 ' have for you, keep your self close till I  
 ' have made your case known to the rest  
 ' of your friends, and I'll immediately re-  
 ' turn to tell you, what they think about it.'

This

This sincere friend was no sooner out of the room, than an anonymous letter directed to *Mr. Dupy* was brought in, in which the author told him, he dar'd not subscribe his name, but that he thought it his duty in friendship to inform him, that he fear'd his life was in danger; and that a lady whom he cherished in his bosom, was the person who had betray'd him. This was a second scheme of the same contrivers, and it had the desired effect: The unhappy *Dupy* gave himself up for lost; he saw the axe and the block before him; and would have very gladly compounded for life, at the expence of his whole fortune.

The lady however had cunning enough to see through the whole plot. She was about to have undeceiv'd him, when the reinforcement of his fears in the letter arriv'd, but it was in vain for her to speak, after he found by this, that she was the very person who had betray'd him. She was turn'd out of doors, and was immediately received by an emissary planted at the next corner to wait for that catastrophe: and, the terrify'd lover removed to another part of the city.

The lady was arriv'd among her lover's friends, by that time his messenger could get thither to tell them where he was; and after some compliments that she did not



know well what to make of, they lock'd her up with a proper guard, and went in a body to wait on their companion in distress.

They had now got the lady: and nothing remain'd, but the securing him out of the way so long as they chose to keep her. He had before they came to him, very well reconciled himself to the conditions of flight from the place, but as they did not well know how long they should have occasion for his absence, they mitigated the terms. The principal person among them now told him, that he would only have him take a good lodging in some more private part of the city, and live quite in secrecy till the return of some letters from England, for that he would dispatch some to the people in power, and endeavour to obtain leave for the trying him there, and 'dear *Dupy* concluded he, 'if that can be obtain'd, we are your judges, and then you may be sure you have 'not much to fear.

It is easy to conceive how happy the distressed gentleman thought himself in this proposal. He took the best apartment he could find, in an obscure part of the city; his friends visited him continually, and drank much good wine at his expence; and when they were tir'd of the lady, told him, that  
letters

letters were return'd from England, and that they had succeeded in their request, and had permission to try him there.

However well satisfy'd his friends might appear to be with this news, *Dupy* was not perfectly easy yet, as he was inform'd there must be all the ceremony of a formal tryal.

His heart was kept in a terrible suspense, while a solemn court was erecting, and the Indictment and Instructions for the council, drawing up in form: at length the tribunal was seated, and the criminal brought to the bar.

Whatever assurances of safety this unhappy gentleman might have receiv'd before he set out, from these malicious witty people, who pleased themselves beyond measure, with the sudden revolutions of happiness and despair, they contrived to work up in their miserable friend; his spirits fail'd him, and he swooned a second time at the bar, when he had heard the indictment read against him, which they had contriv'd to make as formidable as possible.

As soon as he recover'd, one of the company who was to be the council on his side, had leave to speak.

This gentleman open'd his defence, with one argument in his favour, which  
was

was so very strong, that it was not thought necessary to have recourse to any other. He observed that the persons concern'd in plots and treasons, were always cunning, and long-headed people; but that his client was a *fool*, a man so far from being suspected of plots, that no one living creature, man, woman, or child, had ever supposed he had common sense. This affirmation he very industriously supported, by relating at large, the principal actions of his life, from his earliest infancy to the present hour, all which he urged prov'd him beyond suspicion or contradiction, to be an absolute drivelling idiot.

The criminal at the end of every relation made a low bow, thank'd the worthy person, who had been pleas'd to inform the court so justly about him, and assur'd the noble gentlemen of that honourable bench, that he was not only sensible himself, that he was a fool; but that every body he ever knew in his life, had not only taken him for a fool, but had made a fool of him.

He was going to add many remarkable proofs of this, from other incidents of his life, which had not come within that gentleman's knowledge, when one of the bench interrupted him, by observing, that  
he

he apprehended, there needed no farther proof of the matter of fact, but that the whole cause seem'd now to turn upon a point of law, which was, whether a man's being a fool, would or would not, be a sufficient proof of innocence, in matters of this kind. This was happily for the poor Dupy, answer'd in the affirmative by the whole court ; on which the gentleman who had propos'd the point, got up ; and taking his friend by the hand, said, my dear Mr. Dupy, I give you joy of your acquittal, there need no farther instances to prove that you are entitled to the benefit of this law ; you need give yourself no farther trouble to prove that you are a fool ; we all of us have the honour to be of your acquaintance, and have been always perfectly convinc'd of it.

Thus ended this memorable event. The court declar'd the prisoner innocent, and after partaking of an entertainment, that he gave for the joy of his deliverance, and which lasted a week ; they advis'd him to set sail immediately for England, to avoid all farther grounds of suspicion.



## CHAP. XI.

*Mr. Dupy becomes acquainted with  
Lady Juliet—A Party at Lincom  
Spaw.*

LOVEILL had the satisfaction, of seeing lady Juliet extreamly entertain'd with the history he gave her, of this remarkable gentleman: he had indeed observe'd a particular seriousness in her countenance, often interrupting the pleasantry the circumstances of the story in general inspir'd her with, but not knowing what better to make of this, he had interpreted into her excess of compassion, which could not without some concern see a good natur'd fellow in this manner play'd the fool with. When he had concluded the narration, she thank'd him in a very polite manner, and told him, that as this was a sort of man she flatter'd herself he would not be jealous of, she was not afraid to confess, that she had an extream curiosity to be acquainted with him, if she could find any means of bringing it about.

The coach in which this amiable couple were, had left the hero of the story far behind,

behind, by that time it had been brought to a period, but on this declaration of lady Juliet's, Loveill order'd it to turn about, and telling the lady, that nothing was so easy as to gratify her curiosity, for that he had the honour to be of the number of Mr. Dupy's acquaintance, they came back to the place where they had left him, and Loveill getting out, told her, he would bring him to her in an instant.

The few moments of her lover's absence on this occasion, gave lady Juliet an opportunity of considering of something, which she had ever since the beginning of the late deliver'd history, wanted to employ her thoughts seriously about. Notwithstanding the ridiculous figure, that the gentleman who was the hero of the story, had made in many of the circumstances of it, she could not forget that there were some very interesting things to a woman about him. Five thousand pounds a year and a fool, were circumstances that she could not pass over with indifference, and such is the natural levity of women of this stamp, that she had no sooner employ'd the few moments that now offer'd themselves, in comparing the two objects before her, (for she had that settled good opinion of her own charms, that it was always

ways a clear case with her, that she might have any man she pleas'd,) than she came to a resolution, that a fool and five thousand pounds a year, was a much better thing, than five thousand pound and mr. Loveill. The whole scene of delight she had before painted out to herself with this agreeable lover, vanish'd at the superior charms of jewels, a coach and six, and a life of splendour and magnificence. Mr. Loveill was not so much as thought of as a private friend in her new plan'd state of marriage; but we are left in the dark to determine, whether this was the effect of the lady's virtuous inclinations, or of her want of leisure to go through all the scenes of her imaginary happiness, for she had scarce had time to fix the grand point, when the lover return'd with the destin'd husband in his hand, whom he with much ceremony introduced to the lady.

From this moment, Loveill was regarded as a fallen favourite; and so sudden, and so violent, are the transitions in a woman's heart, that from the tenderest passion imaginable, lady Juliet in half an hour, passed through all the stages of coolness, indifference, and distaste, to absolute aversion to him; and instead of the man in whom all her thoughts of happiness were center'd

center'd, she began to look on him as a troublesome companion, who interrupted a conversation between her and *Mr. Dupy*, which she found the most interesting in the world; and whose presence laid her under a constraint, that she had no reason to be under in regard to any body.

She was even arriv'd in the time of the coach's going but a mile, at that perfect indifference, with regard to him, that she could censure herself as a mad woman, for the resolution she had taken in his favour, and bleis'd the fortunate providence that had brought her to her senses, and rescu'd her from such imminent destruction.

*Mr. Dupy* is one of those people, who have have been so long us'd to be laught at, that at length they come to take a pleasure in it, and esteem it some sort of merit in themselves, that they are able to make other people merry. He fell into a very familiar conversation with the lady, and seem'd to enjoy in the highest degree, the genteel raillery she exerted against him.

*Loveill* had too much discernment not to see instantly both the lady's intentions, and the reason of them.

He had so strong a sense of her ingratitude, and so hearty a contempt for the object



ject which had occasion'd it, that he had great difficulty to suppress some very severe expressions of resentment: but he could not submit to shew her, that her inconstancy could give him uneasiness, or to acknowledge the triumph of so despicable a rival.

A moment serv'd him to recollect himself after the first emotions this unexpected discovery gave him, and to regulate his future conduct. He easily saw that the lady was uneasy at the restraint his observation laid her under, and in a moment he threw it off; he even complimented her so far, as not to drop the least hint, that there was any thing more than a common acquaintance between them, and politely forwarded every advance that they ventur'd to make toward one another.

*Mr. Dupy* whose talent was not that of discerning the causes of mens actions, and had fallen most desperately in love with lady Juliet at first sight, was heravish'd with the freedom of that lady's behaviour to him, and thought himself the happiest man in the world, in having for a friend with her, a person who he saw was so extreemly intimate with, and yet so perfectly disinterested about her. He knew his estate would support him in  
any

any pretensions, and he made no doubt of the good offices of the person who had introduced him. The lady on the other hand, was a little startled at the easy indifference that appear'd in mr. Loveill, under the provoking circumstances of her encouraging his rival, but he fashion'd his discourse so consistently in every part, that she soon reconcil'd it to his very good opinion of himself, his perfect confidence in her, and his thorough contempt of mr. Dupy.

When the three parties came to understand, or at least to think they understood one another so very well, they became perfectly happy together, and were the pleasantest set of people in the world. They din'd together, drank coffee together, and in fine, went back to Bath together. Where the seeming friendship of mr. Loveill to Dupy, work'd so far upon him, that under pretence of asking him to see his new lodgings, he got him out of lady Juliet's apartments; took him to a tavern; and disclos'd his whole heart to him: he made him the confidant of his amour with lady Juliet, and in the most earnest manner imaginable, entreated his good offices in the advancing his pretensions.

Lady Juliet was by this time irrevocably  
determined

determined to marry Mr. Dupy; and had brought herself to be even mean enough to contrive the abusing the confidence, which she thought the generous lover she had just discarded plac'd in her; and to use him as a necessary instrument of her new amour. She considered that the whole world wou'd be upon her, if she was seen in publick with such a wretch as Dupy, on the footing of her own acquaintance; but she concluded that if she cou'd contrive to keep terms with Loveill, she might by his means have the other, with her as much as she pleas'd, and that he would be understood not her's but his acquaintance.

Our two friends return'd to lady Juliet, by that time she had well concerted the means of this new masterpiece of policy, which the ready concurrence of Loveill, in every thing rendered much easier to her, than she could have expected. All that she dreaded was his being left alone with her, and demanding an enclaireissement, but this he contriv'd to favour her in avoiding.

The happy party sup'd together; and before they parted Dupy who was half drunk with the bumpers he had swallow'd in secret to the success of his scheme petitioned hard for another day's ramble.

Lady

Lady Juliet heartily wish'd to bring this about : she thought it would be going too far with Loveill, if she ventur'd to assent to it; but how great was her joy when that gentleman declar'd his satisfaction in it, and himself nam'd Lincom spaw for the place. Here the company who could not be happier for this time parted, the men to order the coach for the expedition, and the lady to dream of five thousand pound a year, and her dear *Dupy*.

The sun was hardly up earlier the next morning, than the happy *Dupy*; he employ'd some hours in dressing to the best advantage: some say he even added the Spanish purple to the native vermillion of his cheeks on this important occasion, but as there is no good authority for this, and we detest scandal, we decline our assent to it; rather supposing that the high spirits his successful enterprize had given him, added a bloom to his face, which malicious people attributed to a wrong cause. Be this as it will he rows'd the sleeping indifference of mr. Loveill, a great deal earlier than he expected to be called upon, and took him to the lady at whose door the coach waited for them, and who was herself so eager on her new scheme, that she was dress'd before they arriv'd there.

The time of breakfast, that between  
breakfast



breakfast and dinner, and that of the dinner pass'd off with as much gaiety and good humour on all sides as the day before had done. They even chatted away so much of the afternoon, that when they could scarce see one another's faces, lady Juliet tho' the least in a hurry of all the company to break up, was oblig'd to observe, since no body else would, that it grew time to return. Loveill to perfect his complaisance instead of ringing to order the coach on this occasion, made a pretence of speaking himself about it, and politely left the two lovers together.

It may easily be supposed that people in mr. *Dupy's* and *Lady Juliet's* circumstances would not be in haste, to accuse the rival who had left them together of staying too long. It happened however that after they had both said every thing, they had to say on the occasion, Loveill was not come back; and when they had waited a few moments longer, it was judg'd proper that Dupy should go to seek for him and assist him in hastening the equipage.

This gentleman had not the trouble of a more search after his friend: he was no sooner come down stairs than he saw the door of a parlour open, in which Loveill was very composedly sitting with a couple of candles before him, reading the news.

*Dupy*

*Dupy* had no time to exclaim at his indolence, for as soon as he entered the room Loveill shut the door, bade him sit down, and told him he had something to entrust him with in confidence of friendship. *Dupy's* blood ran cold in his veins at hearing this, and his terrors were not a little encreas'd on his observing that Loveill, who knew very well his natural aversion to cold iron, was playing with his sword between his legs as he spoke to him. The terrors of a challenge had wrought so strongly on this peaceful gentleman, that when Loveill explain'd himself to him and he found all that was requir'd of him was the going back to Bath by himself, his transports were too great for utterance. Mr. *Dupy*, said Loveill ' the coach that  
 ' brought us hither, stands at the end of  
 ' the garden. You must immediately get  
 ' into it and return. Lady Juliet and I  
 ' have some particular affairs to settle and  
 ' shall hardly be back before to morrow.  
 ' if you hesitate at this, sir, (continued  
 ' Loveill laying hold of the gripe of his  
 ' sword) I am sorry two friends like you,  
 ' and I must quarrel.—as a friend and a  
 ' gentleman, I request if of you also mr.  
 ' *Dupy* not to tell any body that you left  
 ' us together. But this sir, I have no right  
 ' to tye you to on the same penalty: Your  
 ' own

‘ own friendship for the lady, must determine you in this.

The alternative that was offer’d to the frightened *Dupy*’s choice admitted of no deliberation; he took a short leave of his friend, told him he found he had been mistaken; wish’d him a great deal of happiness, and tripping it over the garden, at a dozen steps, got into the coach and ordered the fellow to drive to Bath, as if the devil was in him. He arriv’d there just at the time of the full assembly, at the rooms; and as the news he had to tell people, was too important for delay, he made the best of his way thither, without staying to new dress, and entertain’d the company with about five hundred repetitions of the whole story, concluding at every period, ‘ nay if you don’t believe it, only go to morrow morning and you’ll find them there.’

Loveill no sooner saw the coach drive off with this gentleman, than he return’d to the house, ordered a genteel supper to be ready in an hour, and went up very coolly and deliberately to the apartment, where the lady was.

Lady Juliet was a little startled at seeing him enter alone; but she was so good a mistress of dissimulation, that her confusion lasted but a moment, she immediately recollected

recollected herself, got up to meet him with an affected good humour, and with a look of perfect complacency, said ‘ dearest  
 ‘ Loveill, I shall adore you as long as I  
 ‘ live, for bringing me acquainted with  
 ‘ this precious coxcomb.” Loveill reply’d, with a look of great gravity, ‘ madam, sit  
 ‘ down:—first let me, (continued he, taking hold of the handle of the bell, and cutting off the rope as high as he could reach) ‘ demolish this tattling implement—  
 ‘ you will be able I believe to make more  
 ‘ noise than I shall like without it.—I don’t  
 ‘ know whether you observ’d my fastening  
 ‘ the door, as I came in,—that is secure  
 ‘ enough and the windows are too high to  
 ‘ leap out of: but I have taken the additi-  
 ‘ onal precaution of having them fastened  
 ‘ down before we came;—as to your friend  
 ‘ madam, (concluded he in a somewhat  
 ‘ milder tone) I have dispatch’d the coach  
 ‘ away with him, without orders for re-  
 ‘ turning, and you and I must entertain  
 ‘ one another, as well as we can.—

Lady Juliet who had been drown’d in tears, from the beginning of this terrible declaration, recover’d herself enough by that time he came to the conclusion of it, to tell him, ‘ ’tis mean mr. Loveill, ’tis base  
 ‘ and barbarous to triumph in the success of  
 ‘ an infamous design upon a person whom  
 Vol. I. H ‘ nothing



‘ nothing except her having too perfect a  
 ‘ confidence in you could have drawn into  
 ‘ it.—That confidence sir, is now my  
 ‘ support in it, I cannot believe but that I  
 ‘ am safe even now, because I cannot believe  
 ‘ that you can be a villain.”—

Madam, reply’d Loveill, ‘ let it not ap-  
 ‘ pear impossible to you, that you should  
 ‘ think too well of me—you know how  
 ‘ much too well I have thought of you—  
 ‘ I have lov’d you *Lady Juliet* more, infi-  
 ‘ nitely more than any woman could deserve  
 ‘ to be belov’d,—you have return’d it with  
 ‘ baseness and ingratitude, as much below  
 ‘ the character of the meanest of your sex,  
 ‘ as my foolish thoughts had plac’d you  
 ‘ above the highest of them—don’t imagine  
 ‘ me so mean, that I could supplicate the  
 ‘ return of your pretended affection! Love,  
 ‘ madam, is at an end, I could have left  
 ‘ you to your worthy fool, with a con-  
 ‘ tempt, you both deserve, were that alone  
 ‘ the subject of my thoughts ; but tho’ love  
 ‘ is over there is another passion lady Juliet  
 ‘ which must and will be satisfy’d.

‘ Monster and brute that you are (re-  
 ‘ ply’d the lady) ‘ know I could almost tell  
 ‘ you that I defy your meditated villainy, —  
 ‘ mr. Loveill, you and I know the world  
 ‘ and one another so well, that I hope we  
 ‘ both know not only that, I will not sub-

‘ mit

' mit to your baseness; but that whatever  
 ' pretences may have been conjur'd up by  
 ' fools, no woman can be forc'd—Be that  
 ' as it will, madam," (reply'd the lover,  
 who all this time kept his place without e-  
 ver approaching a step towards her) ' I  
 ' suppose there might happen some inde-  
 ' cencies in the attempt, that a woman of  
 ' lady Juliet's delicacy would not know  
 ' how to reconcile to herself.'—The artful  
 composure which Mr. Loveill had so well  
 kept up in this whole scene was much  
 more terrible to a person of lady Juliet's  
 discernment, than the most violent at-  
 tempts of an irresolute gust of passion  
 would have been. She look'd stedfastly  
 at him for some moments, and perceiving  
 no alteration in his countenance, she sat  
 down with a sigh that spoke more real  
 anguish and despair, than ever woman felt  
 before, and said: ' I see my fate,—and I  
 ' submit to it.—I do believe you dare, and  
 ' can do any thing.—I have only this to  
 ' add, I hope you have resolv'd to mur-  
 ' ther as well as ravish me; for be assur-  
 ' ed no sense of my own shame shall save  
 ' you from justice for it.'

The lady was going on with many more  
 protestations and threatenings of the same  
 kind, when Loveill with a contemptuous  
 smile interrupted her by telling her: ' Ma-

‘ dam, you may reserve these terrible me-  
‘ naces for some future occasion.—The ve-  
‘ hement of your anger has carried you  
‘ far beyond the bounds of my intentions:-  
‘ The passion which I told you must be sa-  
‘ tisfied, is not what your ready thoughts  
‘ suspect it: it is revenge: it is the making  
‘ you as contemptible to the world (as to my  
‘ shame be it spoken) you have made me  
‘ to myself. This, madam, is all I have  
‘ to aim at,—that you are in my power,  
‘ and that you are sensible you are so is  
‘ all I could propose to myself for the pre-  
‘ sent moment, for do not imagine lady  
‘ Juliet, notwithstanding your high opi-  
‘ nion of your own charms, that I could  
‘ prostitute any passion, that had but the  
‘ least resemblance to love on so unworthy  
‘ an object.’—

A gentle rap at the door of an adjoining chamber here interrupted the discourse, on which Loveill directing his voice that way said: ‘ You may go in.—madam! continu-  
‘ ed he, you now see my whole scheme  
‘ upon you; — there is a supper in the  
‘ next room, which if you’ll set down to  
‘ you are welcome;—if not, I shall eat of  
‘ it by myself:—you will also find a bed  
‘ there; in which you will lie alone for  
‘ me I assure you; I shall only disturb  
‘ you by breakfasting there about eleven

‘ in the morning, an hour after which I  
 ‘ shall return to Bath, and there will be a  
 ‘ place in the coach at your service, if you  
 ‘ are in a humour to return thither.’

The vexation of the lady now that she saw the whole scheme of her revengeful lover, was little less than it had been in the moments of her utmost terror. She found she was ruin’d for ever as to reputation ; and was almost more angry at being thus made a sacrifice without having deserv’d it, than if she had. After a sullen silence of an hour on her part, while Loveill eat his supper, he left her carefully locked up and went to his repose.

He kept his word in not disturbing her till eleven, when breakfast was serv’d in, and he found her up. Dupy had executed exactly the part that was intended for him, and the consequence of the public notice he had given of lady Juliet’s engagement, was that no less than twelve parties of four or five coach-fulls a-piece drove up to the house, while our hero and heroine were *tete a tete* at breakfast in the bed-chamber, and occupied every room round about it.

The distracted lady Juliet saw no way out of the house, but through two or three sets, in every one of which she saw the faces of several of her bitterest enemies : in fine, when the company were



all seated, and every thing was ready, the door of the apartment she was in with her lover flew open, and the musick of the place appear'd before it, amidst the acclamations of a numerous assembly of mob, whom they had been order'd to bring with them, serenading her good ladyship, and the gentleman in his cap and slippers, who was sitting on the bedside at breakfast.

## CH A P. XII.

*Character of mrs. Meanwell. — Lady Juliet vindicated in this seeming very black scene. — Lovell returns to Bath.*

THE intelligence mr. Dupy had brought to Bath, of lady Juliet's adventure, had given people so little time to form their parties, for going to congratulate her on the success of it, that many of the persons who were invited to go, were not inform'd of the occasion of the expedition. Among the number of these, was the friendly, the generous, the worthy mrs. Meanwell. This lady who liv'd in a private, tho' genteel manner at Bristol, and frequented but little the gay places, she chanced to be situated so near, had accidentally been upon a visit at  
Bath

Bath on the day before, and having been met by one of the most busy of the unhappy lady Juliet's enemies at a third place, that eager propagator of scandal, had contriv'd as she imagin'd, to send the story to Bristol as soon as possible, by inviting this lady to be of the party she took to the scene of it,

'Tis easy to conceive, that this artful friend of mischief, had not acquainted mrs. Meanwell, with the design of their going; as she was very sensible, nothing could have induc'd that benevolent creature, to have assisted at, or shar'd in a triumph over the misfortunes of any unhappy person of her own sex. It was with great uneasiness, that this generous lady heard by several hints as they went along, that they were going to see a stranger expos'd; but how much greater was her concern on seeing soon after she got there, by the opening of the door of the chamber, that this stranger was no other than her most dear and intimate friend.

The triumph of that part of the company that she was among, was not a little damp'd, by the different light in which she explain'd what they saw before them, and what the others were so rejoic'd about. She well knew the genius and temper of the lady who had brought her, and

## 152      The ADVENTURES of

was so sensible that she would look upon the clearing lady Juliet, as a particular injury done to herself, that she did not pretend to say any thing to her, in that unhappy lady's favour; she singled out the most moderate person of the company, and addressing herself to her, said ' Depend upon it, madam, we are all deceived in the light we place this odd affair in. I know intimately well both the persons concern'd, tho' I did not know they were at Bath, nor imagine that they knew one another. I am so confident (continued she) of lady Juliet's virtue, and honour, that I dare venture my own reputation and character on it, that she is as free from any crime in this affair, as I am; and as for mr. Loveill, I have known too many tricks of his, to be impos'd upon by appearances. Be assured ladies (continued she, addressing herself now to several other women, who she saw paid some attention to her) either they are married, and mr. Loveill intends to give you an entertainment here upon the occasion; or they have quarrell'd, and he has contriv'd this method of exposing her. Alas! alas! you know very little of that gentleman (continued she) if you suppose you are here any other way, than by his own consent and contrivance;

‘ contrivance; or think that if he had a  
 ‘ mind to do a criminal thing, it would  
 ‘ be within the reach of any body here to  
 ‘ surprize him in it.—I know if he had  
 ‘ ever receiv’d such a favour as you sus-  
 ‘ pect, from that lady, or from any wo-  
 ‘ man, nothing in nature could have ever  
 ‘ provok’d him to expose her.—I heard  
 ‘ of the whole matter by the way, and I see  
 ‘ through it all.—Could any body ima-  
 ‘ gine, a man of sense would lay himself  
 ‘ so open as you have suppos’d he did,  
 ‘ otherwise than by design? Dupy is a  
 ‘ fool: and depend upon it, was his tool  
 ‘ in all this; and was deputed by him to  
 ‘ get you together.—Let me repeat it to  
 ‘ you again (concluded she) that from the  
 ‘ knowledge I have of the man, I am  
 ‘ confident, it will turn out, either,  
 ‘ that they are married, or that there is  
 ‘ nothing between them.’—

The establish’d character of mrs. Mean-  
 well, and the vehemence with which she  
 deliver’d herself on this occasion, drew  
 many people to her party: they were dis-  
 puting, whether they should envy lady  
 Juliet an agreeable husband, or pity her  
 being unjustly scandalized by the contrivance  
 of a malicious villain; when Loveill who  
 had hitherto look’d at the whole scene, as  
 a person unconcern’d in it, on hearing his



name mentioned by some of the fidlers, and succeeded by a loud shout, advanced very coolly to the head of the stairs, and putting his hand in his coat pocket, took out a handful of silver, threw it among the mob, and bade them go back, and drink it out at Bath.

The present was receiv'd with a general huzza, and the whole mob had clear'd off in an instant, when the hero of our story, with a great deal of importance in his look, call'd to the musick and told them: 'Gentlemen, I have a great deal of reason to be displeased with this visit from you—If I hear another sound from any of you, not a man of you ever plays at Bath again.—I hope these people who have employ'd you, will pay you; but if they can't afford it—follow me to my lodgings, and I'll do it for them.'

The whole band express'd at once their contrition and their gratitude, by putting up their fiddles with very sorrowful countenances, and preparing to follow him, when turning back to his apartment, he took his leave of his companion saying, 'lady Juliet I have the honour to wish you a good morning:' and without taking any notice of the rest of the company, got into a coach that waited for him, and went off for Bath.      The

The high hand with which Loveill had carry'd every thing, allowed the company but little room for triumph, while he remain'd on the field : but the noise was rising very high on his departing, till mrs. Meanwell, who assur'd the company, that she was now confident of lady Juliet's innocence, and that this was only a piece of malicious revenge for some private quarrel, perhaps for denying those very favours, they were accusing her of granting him, prevail'd with half a dozen of the people of most consequence among them to join her and go to the lady.

This lucky accident, compleated the ruin of the whole company's scheme of rejoicing : the characters of the people whom they saw go to join lady Juliet, convinc'd them she had not lost her's, and after a general whisper that they were certainly impos'd upon, they drop'd off, party by party, till in half an hour, lady Juliet and her company, remain'd alone in possession of the house.

## C H A P. XIII.

*Lady Juliet gains a set of new friends: she relates to them the whole story of Loveill.*

THE joy and gratitude of lady Juliet on seeing her most intimate friend after a long abience, and under such particular

particular circumstances is not easily expressed. her pride would not suffer her to think of stirring till every body else was gone off, nor had her disorder, and confusion suffered her to say much while they were there. When the place was clear she caught mrs. Meanwell round the neck, and after a welcome given her in all the eloquence of tears, she told her: ‘I am too sensible of the  
 ‘ obligation I have to you my dearest friend,  
 ‘ and to these ladies who have been so generous to countenance me in this terrible scene, not to make it my first care  
 ‘ to convince you all, that you have not  
 ‘ thrown away your friendship on a person  
 ‘ unworthy of it. Sit down, and let me  
 ‘ tell you in how cruel, and how cunning  
 ‘ a manner I have been drawn into this  
 ‘ appearance of guilt, and shame.’ The company were impatient enough to hear the history of so remarkable a transition, and lady Juliet in the relating it gave them the detail of every incident, that had pass’d between mr. Loveill and herself; she never spared her own faults in any part of the story, but was even generous enough to own in the conclusion, that the cruel method he had taken to be revenged of her perfidy was not more than she deserved.

The

The candour, and ingenuity of the lady in relating the story and the agreement of the circumstances of it, with what mrs. Meanwell had concluded to be the case, convinc'd every body present, that lady Juliet was innocent of what she had been suspected of; and interested them in her cause in such a manner, that they every one join'd in offers of any friendship in their power, and in desiring to commence an acquaintance with her.

They comforted her with telling her, that the scandal of such a place as Bath, was of very little consequence even while it lasted, and that it always soon blew over: and in fine, advis'd her to pay no sort of regard to it, but go to the rooms that very night with them.

Lady Juliet was very sensible of the friendly intent of all this, but she prudently told them, she was too sensible of the ill-natur'd disposition of the world in general, to suppose that tho' they had generously overlook'd suspicious accidents because there was really no ill in them, others would do so: ' No ladies, (continues she) ' till the world is made up of such persons as mrs. Meanwell and her friends, ' virtue and innocence, will prove but ' poor recommendations to its favour. For ' my own part, (concluded she) my sense  
 ' of



‘ of the thing (but I shall submit it to my  
 ‘ friends) is to stay here till evening; and  
 ‘ if I dar’d ask so great a favour, I would  
 ‘ wish you to accompany me; to return  
 ‘ to Bath at an hour when the people are  
 ‘ all in the rooms; and (as illness at that  
 ‘ place is the pretence for every occasion  
 ‘ of staying at home,) to play the dissem-  
 ‘ bler upon compulsion, and keep within,  
 ‘ at least, till the nine days noise is over.’

Mrs. Meanwell approv’d the proposal, and the rest of the company told the lady, they were well convinc’d how little able they were to direct or advise her. They promis’d to make her retirement as agreeable to her as they could, by visiting her as often as herself should desire it; and the generous mrs. Meanwell, who saw an uneasiness in her friend’s countenance, that she perceiv’d would make her but a very bad companion to herself, added an offer of staying with her the whole time.

#### C H A P. XIV.

*Mrs. Meanwell informs her friend of the birth and circumstances of her lover.*

**T**HE company who had join’d lady Juliet with mrs. Meanwell, after spending

spending the day at the spa with her, attended her to Bath in the evening, and would not be prevail'd with to leave her, till it was time for bed. She had no opportunity therefore, of unbosoming herself more at large to her friend in private, till the next morning. The common eagerness to hear and to talk more of this strange adventure, rous'd them both a little earlier than fine ladies usually get up. They were no sooner met, than lady Juliet whose impatience could not give her friend leave to ask a question, burst forth in a deep sigh, attended with a passionate squeeze of her hand, and an exclamation of ' my dearest friend! I never imagin'd how terrible a thing it is to abuse a man of sense.—The repentment of this generous, gallant cruel fellow, will live in my memory, long after he has despis'd and forgot me.—I know your prudence will condemn me, for being led into such a snare as this; but if you had known the man who led me into it—

She was going on in a very earnest manner, when her friend told her with a good natur'd smile, ' I must interrupt you my dear lady Juliet, by telling you, that there is a little mistake in your judgment of this matter, for that it is I that do know Mr. Loveill, and 'tis the misfortune

‘ tune of my dear and injur’d friend, that  
 ‘ she did not know him sooner, nor does  
 ‘ indeed half know him yet. You seem  
 ‘ not yet to be sensible my dear, (continued  
 ‘ she) that you have got into the most ter-  
 ‘ rible hands, a woman who had occasion  
 ‘ to quarrel with a man, could possibly  
 ‘ have fallen into. The general character  
 ‘ of mr. Loveill among his own sex is,  
 ‘ that he is of all men the most to be va-  
 ‘ lued as a friend, and of all men the most  
 ‘ to be dreaded as an enemy.

‘ I am sorry to find by your manner of  
 ‘ speaking of him, that you still retain a  
 ‘ value for him—You must conquer it my  
 ‘ dearest lady Juliet—You must never ex-  
 ‘ pect to see him again—One of his settled  
 ‘ principles of life, is never to forgive an  
 ‘ injury: so at least his severity loves to  
 ‘ express it, tho’ all that he really deter-  
 ‘ mines, is never to give a person who has  
 ‘ behav’d ill to him, an opportunity of  
 ‘ doing so again. I have known him re-  
 ‘ lieve, assist, nay once (added she with a  
 ‘ deep sigh) hazard his life, in the cause of  
 ‘ one who had injur’d him in the grossest  
 ‘ manner. All that he truly means by so  
 ‘ seemingly unchristian a declaration, is  
 ‘ only, that as he never does an injury,  
 ‘ so he never suffers one with impunity;  
 ‘ and

‘ and as he never gives occasion to a quarrel, so he never makes up one.

‘ I apply (continued she) my dear friend this painful but necessary remedy, to a wound that you must be cur’d of; and give you at once the unalterable character of the lover you have lost; that you may not continue your misery, by a vain expectation of recovering him.’

Lady Juliet who had been amaz’d beyond measure, at the beginning of this declaration of her friend had attended to the remainder of it, with a strange variety of emotions. Love, terror and despair, had taken up her whole heart by turns: at length she sat down by mrs. Meanwell and told her:

‘ You have distracted me, dearest creature, with this account of Loveill’s unforgiving temper; but you have rejoic’d me beyond bounds, by informing me that you know him.—knowing him is not enough;—you must have had much more than a common acquaintance, with a man whose inmost thoughts you appear to be so perfectly informed of,—would you imagine that I have enquir’d of all the world after him in vain? no body has been able to tell me where, or what he is, or whence he comes;—but you, I dare say, can inform me of every thing about him. — How came you, dearest friend,



‘ friend, by such an intimacy with him?—  
‘ I know, replied mrs. Meanwell, his history from a child, and I can love to  
‘ talk about him as long as you can love  
‘ to hear of him : for my own part let it  
‘ suffice, that I am, like yourself, a person  
‘ despised by him, for having basely  
‘ injur’d him. I have after some years  
‘ uneasiness, at length chang’d into a settled  
‘ esteem, that passion which but for  
‘ my own misfortunes might have made  
‘ me happier, under a softer name;—you  
‘ must do this too;—and if you will be  
‘ wise by my example do it at once, and  
‘ let a certainty that you can never have  
‘ his love again destroy the troublesome  
‘ and fruitless hope of it.’

Lady Juliet was very sensibly affected by this interesting discourse, she smother’d however her uneasiness for the present, and entreated to be let into the history of a person who had been so fatal to her repose. Mr. Meanwell satisfy’d her curiosity in the following manner.

Mr. Loveill is a younger son of a younger brother of one of the best families in England. His father was bred to the gown, and by the interest of his family soon obtained preferments in the church, that made his affairs very easy to him. His mother brought a better fortune than

a person whose income was to perish with him could reasonably have expected; but as this was settled upon an eldest son, the younger children had but a gloomy prospect.

Nothing is more certain than that people are originally born with the tendencies to what are to be in their advanced age, their peculiar qualities, mr. Loveill from an infant was observed to be naturally generous, and friendly to every body, but obstinate in his his opinions, and impatient of any injury.

At about seven years old, which is the æra to date his fortune from, he was remarked in the town where he then liv'd for a pretty face, a smartness of expression, and a daring intrepidity that had led him into, and had also led him out of more scrapes than perhaps any body of his age had ever been engag'd in.

As the young gentleman was returning one evening thro' the streets of this place, from his favourite diversion fishing, loaded with spoils of the day, a huge pike almost as long as himself, which was flung in triumph a-cross his shoulders, the window of a tavern parlour was thrown up, and a meagre old fellow with a shrivell'd face, and piping voice, call'd after him, Little boy come hither.

The

The young spark's pride was a little mortify'd by the diminutive appellation, the old gentleman had given him; and the provocation was not a little aggravated, when on his turning back he was ask'd, What he would take for that fish.

All the blood in his body was gathered into his face in an instant, on his hearing this question: he threw down the fish, and with a world of spirit and resentment answered: 'Sir! I cannot tell whether you  
' don't know me; or mean to affront  
' me: if the first is the case, it is some  
' scandal to your age, not to have a little  
' more discernment; and if the other I am  
' very sorry you are not a little younger—  
' sir, my name is Loveill; and I wish I  
' knew who you are that have taken a  
' person of one of the best families in England for a fish-boy;—however if you  
' have a mind to the fish, to convince  
' you of your mistake, if you'll accept of  
' it as a present, 'tis at your service.'

There is a time when old men become children a second time, and by that means naturally grow fond of every thing that is like themselves; the gentleman who had incurr'd our young spark's displeasure, was growing towards that period: he was struck with the wit, and spirit of the reply, and as he perceiv'd the boy talked like a  
man,

man, he treated him like one; accepted of his present upon condition, that he would give him the pleasure of his company at supper; and behaved to him afterwards with a respect that won the child's heart, as much as he captivated his.

During the time of supper the old gentleman had been very particular in his enquiries into the state of his young companion's family, and had express'd a desire of being informed of many things in the genealogy and descent of it, which he found his young acquaintance not at all prepared to answer him about: at taking his leave, he kissed him very tenderly, made him call him parent, and ask his blessing, and finally call'd in the master of the house, gave him charge of conducting the youth safely home, and commission'd him to deliver his compliments to his father, and family, and request the pleasure of their company the next day, to dine with him.

## CHAP. XV.

*History of sir Gripe Loveill;—a strange turn in the affairs of the hero of our story.—*

**T**HE person who had thus made an acquaintance with our young hero, was



no other than the very famous sir Gripe Loveill, a fellow who had from a beginning with about five hundred pounds amass'd a fortune of a hundred and seventy thousand; who was annually adding to it, at least four-fifths of its interest at the best rate; and who had at that time no other unhappiness in the world, but the want of an heir.

The manner in which this memorable knight had scraped up his fortune had rendered him odious to all the world, and he hated all the world in return. He had artifice enough, however, to render himself necessary to many people, and on all these occasions to gratify his two favourite passions malice and avarice at once. As he liv'd in a country town, he considered that people must drink, must travel, and must often want ready money; to enrich himself from all these necessities, he contrived to be made a justice of the peace, and always to have ready cash at command with which to act as a usurer. In favour of the latter of these capacities he forwarded to the utmost all sorts of extravagances among the young people of fortune about him, and then lent them money at twenty *per cent* to supply them: and in order to make the most of the former, he set up a warehouse under the management and in the name of a servant, where

where all things consum'd at publick houses, from the wine for the guests, to the oats for their horses, were sold ; and he would grant licenses to no body for keeping them, but upon condition of their buying every thing they consum'd there. If he had occasion to pay a servant he would contrive to put him in a passion, and keep him in it, till he was able to set aside half his wages to pay for the oaths he had sworn ; And if he wanted a supply to his plough or coach-horses, he only gave orders to his servants to dig away the road in the night in some naturally bad place, near which he would watch at the hour of the next stage wag-gons going by, to take off out the seventh horse, which the poor carrier was oblig'd to add to his team, to get it out of the hole, which in quality of a magistrate he would send away to his own stable.

When I mention to you, madam, (continued mrs. Meanwell) that this gentleman wanted an heir, you are not to understand that I meant to tell you he had no children : his family at this time consisted of a wife, whom he kept lock'd up, under a pretence of a punishment for adultery, in order to avoid the expence of cloaths and visits ; and three sons, the two eldest of which, he had long before procur'd to be arrested for debt, and kept in jail, as the cheapest place

place where he could possibly provide for them, while he retain'd the youngest in the house, with a green apron, and a salary of six pounds ten shillings a year in the capacity of his principal butler.

The only relation he kept besides in his family, was a girl of five years old, the daughter of his second son, who had married the Jailor's niece, in a hope (which the careful father provided however to set aside) of obtaining his liberty, and whom he had order'd to be made a useful member of the common wealth, by being bred under the dairy maid.

Such were the circumstances of this gentleman's family, when in going into the country, upon the honest scheme of buying a Borough, in order to be able to sell himself and his conscience, he accidentally met with your mr. Loveill. He had taken a strong fancy to the boy, from the first sentence he had spoke to him, but when he heard him boast so arrogantly of his name and family, he found himself infinitely more interested in his affairs. He pick'd up enough, even from the imperfect account the child was able to give of his genealogy, to shew that he was more nearly related to him, than he supposed any male of his name (his own sons alone excepted) to be: he immediately determin'd him  
his

his heir: and had as much pleasure in the thought of this, from the scandalous motive of spiting his children, as an honest man would have had in the doing it in favour of so promising a person.

At dinner the next day the old knight in great good humour, testify'd great satisfaction in finding a set of so agreeable relations, whom he had not before known of; and with an open profession of his intentions in regard to the boy, and many promises of friendship to all the rest, he engaged the father to leave his preferments, and bring his whole family to him: desiring him to live in the house with him till some preferments in his gift, of much more value than what he already possess'd, became vacant. After dinner in the fulness of his heart, he call'd for pen and ink, and as an earnest of his good intentions for his heir, gave him a promissary note for five thousand pounds, which as soon as he return'd home he paid, and caus'd the money to be deposited in the publick funds to the best advantage.

The father of mr. Loveill accepted the civilities of the old knight: he liv'd with him about two years: but the expence this frugal gentleman found he had



drawn upon himself by thus enlarging his family, sat so heavy upon him that at the end of this time he shuffled him off, and the worthy old man would have starv'd for the remainder of his life upon a poor curacy, had not your lover assisted him with the interest of his independent fortune. He had even the mortification to see the principal of the two livings, on the promise of which he had quitted his former preferments become vacant, and given by sir Gripe before his face to a stranger. This was a circumstance he could by no means at that time reconcile to the nature of things, as he had liv'd, tho' unhappily under his patron, yet without repining, or doing any thing that he had taken or could take offence at; but the mystery was explain'd afterwards, by its appearing that the gentleman to whom the world had suppos'd he gave it, had bought the next presentation of him for a considerable sum, during the last sickness of the late incumbent.

Sir Gripe wish'd indeed extremely well to the whole family, of which his new heir was come; but he could not prevail with himself, to enlarge his expences on any account: and as to the affair of the living, when the matter was brought to the alter-

native of, Shall I keep my promise or get five hundred pounds by breaking it? there was no room for debate on the occasion.

From this time the father of mr. Loveill and sir Gripe became strangers. No man ever forgives the person whom he has injur'd; and it was impossible for the knight to look a man he had treated so cruelly in the face, without a confusion, he did not care to plague himself with. All his favours now were bestow'd upon the son only. An old man's dotage had carried his passions to that length for this happy boy, that he was not only generous but profuse in his liberality to him. Nothing he could fancy, but was immediately brought before him: Nothing worth seeing was talk'd of, but he was carry'd to it: No sort of extravagance in dress but was forc'd upon him; and no family in the county but paid him the respect of the person who was one day to be the principal man in it.

In this manner, madam, (continued mrs. Meanwell) your lover pass'd the six succeeding years of his life, in a sort of favoured and indulg'd pride, which you are not to wonder that he still retains some tincture of; children cannot be happy without children for play-fellows. The only person the house of sir Gripe afford-

ed for our young gentleman's companion was the knight's grand-daughter whom I mention'd to you a little while ago. The high favour the young gentleman was in, soon obtain'd this young lady's release from the drudgery she was destin'd to; and the knight tho' he hated and despis'd the poor little creature, on account of her mother, yet that she might not be rank'd in her former quality now she was advanc'd to be the young gentleman's companion, settled two thousand pounds upon her, to make her a gentlewoman.

Our hero was a little more than fourteen, when the credit of the vast fortune he was to be master of, brought upon the old knight a visit from a nobleman of the same county, who had not before been acquainted with him; but who propos'd an alliance with his family by means of an only daughter, to whom he was able to give a very considerable fortune, tho' not equal to what a man of the knight's turn might have expected as equivalent to that of his heir. The father of the lady propos'd, however a tickling bait in lieu of more money which was the aggrandizing the family, by procuring (as he told him, he was pretty certain he had interest enough to do it) the title which was extinct in his house,  
for

for want of a male heir, to be continued to the husband of his daughter, as a man of such fortune as this young gentleman would be.

The knight who was very sudden in all his resolutions, ordered your lover to be call'd in; told him the proposal that was made; and added, that he consented to it, and that he might as soon as he pleas'd visit the lady.

Here began the misfortunes of the young Loveill: he told the father of the lady, that he was extremely sensible of the honour he intended him. ' But, says he, I am  
' convinc'd you would not have a rascal  
' for your son and successor. This gentle-  
' man's generosity has enabled me to be  
' above avarice or ambition; and I have  
' already contracted myself to a young  
' lady, his relation, who is in the house.  
' The least I can do, in return for the  
' bounty I receive from him, is to pre-  
' serve the estate wholly in his family; and  
' I am sure you would not wish to receive  
' me into your's, when it can only be done  
' at the price of sacrificing my faith and  
' honour.'

The young gentleman had been us'd to such applauses from sir Gripe, upon all his determinations that he made no doubt of this having the same reception, but here



interest and ambition were touch'd too nearly : he ordered the young spark out of the room, and told the nobleman that he was a boy of spirit, but that he would teach him to think better.

The consequence of this was, that the next day was employ'd in arguments to prevail with him to alter his opinion, in which the cunning old fellow took care to mix vast offers of present fortune on the one hand, and menaces of the most severe kind on the other. The young lover concluding that there was no danger of performance as to the latter, and that the love and pleasure which he promised himself in abundance with his little play-fellow, were much an over-balance for the want of the former, thought it the surest way to put an end to all solicitations on the part of the other lady, by marrying her at once ; and accordingly as he had learn'd of the knight to be very quick in his resolves, he told her his sentiments, fee'd the clergyman of a neighbouring village, and got out at a backdoor through the gardens early the next morning with her.

The servant who had contriv'd and assisted their escape, prudently considering that he had already got all that he could by it, went up to his master, and in a pretended

ed fright, told him that mr. Loveill and his young mistress were run away together.

I believe it has been from the example of this merciless old fellow that mr. Loveill has copy'd that unforgiving temper which I have, and I fear you will my dear lady Juliet feel too much the effect of: he was not a moment in determining about them. Servants were sent to bring back the girl; as to the boy he told them they need not give themselves any trouble about him. Mischief is always swift enough: the servants overtook them just before they arriv'd at the end of their journey, and brought back the lady; as to the lover his pride would not suffer him to offer himself to a person who had not express'd any desire to see him: he went to his father's, where he heard in about two hours, that the old gentleman had cancell'd the will that made him his heir, and had determin'd never to make another.

This resolution he punctually stuck to; and the consequence was, that about a twelve month afterwards a fit of an apoplexy carrying him off suddenly, and his then only surviving son, drinking himself to death the same day, the law was left to determine what was to become of the for-

tune; and that according to general custom after swallowing up the better half of it, left the rest to be divided by consent among a set of people, to whom if the old knight could have thought it would ever have come, he would have let vengeance have got the better of avarice, and would have destroy'd it in his life-time.

## C H A P. XVI.

*Loveill enters himself at one of the universities — visits London— an affair between him and the celebrated mrs. W——.*

YOUR late lover was now left, madam, (continued mrs. Meanwell) with five thousand pound and a family necessarily dependant on him for a part of it. The masters of all kinds whom the old knight had provided for him had given him as finish'd an education as a person of his years was capable of; and with this foundation he determin'd that he should find it easy to enter himself at one of the universities, where he might support himself with a part of the interest of his little fortune, and

and leave enough to his father to make his life easy to him.

In consequence of this determination, he made himself a member of one of the best colleges, and fell in earnest to the study of a science which he hop'd would hereafter be able to support him something better than the interest of a fortune so inconsiderable in proportion to what he had been educated in the expectation of.

The progress he made in his studies soon rendered him a favourite with the principal people of the university he belong'd to, and by that time he had gone thro' the compleat course of his education, he became known much farther than the narrow bounds of the place where he study'd: he was indeed not less eminent now in point of literature and knowledge, than he had before been in that of his expected fortune.

There is a nobleman in this kingdom, who supports the dignity of that rank, with all the qualities that so exalted a station can render beneficial to the world; who employs an ample fortune in the only purposes for which riches are truly desirable. I need not tell lady Juliet who it is, that of all the English nobility is the most a prince in his disposition, the most a patron in his friendship.



The summer retirement of this truly great man, brings to one's mind the pleasures of the *Tempe* of the antients; every thing that nature, every thing that art can do to make the beauties of a country seat agreeable is here laid before the view, in a profusion that keeps the imagination in continual employ without surfeiting it on sweets; that fills the eye without fatiating it.

Hither every man of sense or merit is invited in the season, to increase the pleasures of the place to the proprietor, by sharing them with him: to be a gentleman and not illnatur'd, are all the farther qualifications requisite. Every one is welcome there, who is capable either of amusing or instructing; or of relishing amusement or instruction. In short, every man who is capable of being agreeable to himself or to others; of entertaining or of being entertain'd. The turn the master of this seat has to the sciences and polite literature, has indeed made people who excel in these qualifications, more particularly welcome to him, and if any of his company seems to enjoy a more than ordinary share of his friendship and attention, it is such of them as have this title to it.

After what you have seen of mr. Loveill,  
and

and what I have now told you of him, you will not wonder that he had the honour of a peculiar share of the favour and friendship of this nobleman. It was in one of the visits I had the honour to make to the ladies of his family, who (to say every thing that is great in a few words) are to the women, what himself is to the men, that I first knew this object of your passions. He was with us more than a month there. I need not tell you that he every hour amus'd, entertain'd, and instructed us: what was most peculiar in him in his gayest hours, was that he had the address of making our sex share in the pleasurable conversation of the men. You know the sort of stories they usually entertain themselves with when we are gone from the table, and they have no company but themselves and their bottles: he had the art of couching the indecent part of these sort of relations under such unexceptionable terms, that the most scrupulous ear might hear the worst of them, without being able to pick out a word, a phrase or sentiment, that it could take offence at.

Perhaps I can no way give you a better idea of your lover's general character, or of the manner in which the men, as well as the women fare in his hands, when they  
venture

venture to play tricks with him, than by relating to you one of these stories as I heard it one evening from his own mouth; and giving you the consequences of it, among people the least likely to be fool'd and baffled in their schemes of any in the world. You will be able by this history to judge of the danger and ruin, yourself have just escaped with him; but yours is not the only instance in which I have occasion to know, that mr. Loveill is even in his wildest flights, a man of honesty and honour.

After this preface mrs. Meanwell enter'd on the story she had promis'd, in the following manner. Your lover, madam, after finishing his studies, left the university and came to London. He had as high relish for all the fooleries of that idle place, as for the serious business he had so long been engag'd in. Within a night or two of his first arriving in town, he was in the stage box at a play, in which mrs. W— perform'd the part of a modern fine lady. This actress is one of those few women, who always appear the handsomer as you see them at a less distance. The situation of our hero, gave him frequent opportunities of gazing on one of the finest women in the world, under all the advantages

ges of dress, lights and ornaments, playing a character in which she appear'd her mere, her very self, and speaking the excellent sense of one of the best poets our nation ever produced, with so just an accent and manner, that it was evident she was very little inferior in point of genius and understanding, to the author.

Your ladyship will not wonder that a gay young fellow, us'd for many years to no better ideas of female charms, than such as he receiv'd from a wrinkled bed-maker, was strongly affected by so dazzling an object. He fell desperately in love with her: he could not sleep that night; but before he ventur'd to address her, he spent the next day in enquiring of every body he knew into her private character.

It was some satisfaction to him to find on all hands that lady was not, as the beaux express it, *uncomeatable*, he was however thoroughly mortified to find that she was at that time much upon the reserve, and to hear from a gentleman of his particular acquaintance, whose sincerity he knew he could depend upon, that on his soliciting an acquaintance with her about a week before, upon terms that he imagin'd no woman who would accept of any terms at  
all



all would have refus'd, he had the disappointment to recieve for answer, that she was oblig'd to him; but that if ever she did a foolish thing of that sort again, it should be for something for life.

A man of less spirit, and no larger a fortune than mr. Loveill's might have given up his attempt on such an information as this, without imputation of diffidence. Perhaps, he had actually done so, but that fate carried him to the same place the following evening, where he again saw her in a capital character, and that such a one as (to the scandal of the part be it remember'd) gave her an opportunity of exerting all the licentious artifices of a woman of address, and of a dissolute turn engag'd in a criminal amour.

The lover saw so much of nature in the spirit with which the lady play'd this scandalous part, that he was doubly fir'd with his unwarrantable passion, and encourag'd by what he judg'd the strongest of all advocates in his favour, the lady's own inclinations, to persist in it.

He supp'd at a tavern, toasted her in more bumpers than he had ever drank before; and heard the advice of half a dozen friends as to the most promising means of attempting her. Some propos'd, the offering

fering her marriage; others, the writing verses on her beauty, or on her playing; and others who seem'd to know a good deal more of the world, the sending her a bauble from the milliner's, and giving her maid ten guineas. The lover slept upon these considerations, and in fine reject-ed them all. He had accidentally seen bills that evening deliver'd about by the orange wenches for a play for her benefit, to be acted about a fortnight afterwards: on this he built a plan never before thought of by any man, and which probably will never be executed again: he went to her house in the afternoon, knock'd at the door, slipp'd a crown into the hand of the servant who open'd it, and sent in word to the lady, that if she was not engag'd he begg'd to speak with her about her benefit.

The lady came out to receive him in the passage. He very deliberately took out of his pocket one of the bills, and telling her that after the success with which he had seen her play the two last nights, he was extreamly happy in the prospect of her appearing in the character that was promis'd in those bills; and adding that he thought the performer who was able to entertain an audience in the manner she had

had lately done, merited some farther acknowledgments than the countenance of their appearance, and the mere play-house pay, he concluded with telling her, that he had waited on her in order to have the honour of receiving a ticket from her own hand.

The lady who had imagin'd from the message sent in, that it was somebody she did not know, and that all the business was a few tickets, as she usually takes great state upon her on these occasions, had come to Mr. Loveill with some of them in her hand, intending no farther ceremony than the delivering him what he wanted, and your humble servant: but upon the civil hint she receiv'd as his speech drew toward a conclusion, she begg'd his pardon, that being a stranger to her she had receiv'd him in that manner; ask'd him into a parlour; and as they enter'd into discourse begg'd leave to know, to avoid mistakes, what title it was her duty to call him by.

The lover saw the drift of this cunning compliment, and as cunningly evaded it, and at the same time favour'd the deceit, by telling her titles were things too troublesome to be worn by men of sense on choice, and that he believ'd every body who had a right to them, a few idle  
people

people excepted, who had lately obtain'd them, would be very glad if opportunities of their being forgotten or unknown were more frequent.

A very familiar conversation ensued on this declaration, in which however the lady very carefully kept up that modesty, and distance, which it is a very valuable part of her character never to forget when she is in company with her superiors, Loveill said a thousand civil things to her person, and accomplishments, and soon finding she had so much the woman in her, that she was open on all sides to flattery, he laid on that general colour thick enough wherever there was place for it.

In the course of their conversation he took a single ticket of her, and gave her five guineas for it: the opinion she had conceived of his quality had made her expect a more considerable present, but she received this with great politeness, and when she saw he could not prevail with himself to have a mind to take his leave of her, she order'd tea. A great deal of civility pass'd between these two accomplished persons, while the ceremony of this intermediate meal, if it may be called so, lasted, but when the things were removed



moved matters put on a very different face between them. Mr. Loveill, who had found a great deal of difficulty in keeping his distance so long, ventured to attempt some little familiarities under pretence of taking his leave, but which in consequence of those familiarities, he told her he found it impossible to do.

The lady who had been not a little displeased before, now grew outrageous: she took out the five guineas he had given her for the ticket, and threw them at his head, calling him pitiful puppy for supposing she was to be his fool, for that paltry price of a ticket. The lover very coolly pick'd up the money, and put it in his pocket, telling her he was obliged to her generosity for doing him a favour upon easier conditions than he expected; and madam continued he pulling her into the next room: 'You shall see at how much higher a rate than five guineas I value your favours since I shall venture even my life in the purchase of them; though I think I should laugh at being try'd for ravishing mrs. W——'.

The servants in this lady's house had been used to keep a proper distance, and not think themselves concerned in any little scuffle they heard above-stairs: in fine,  
none

none of them appeared on this occasion, till the bell summon'd a footman who was dispatch'd to the play-house, with a message to the master, to tell him his lady was very ill, and was not able to act that night. To conclude the story, your lover never left the house, except to attend the lady to the play, for a fortnight.

Mr. Loveill (continued mrs. Meanwell) observ'd as he proceeded in his relation, that all the company receiv'd it with a peculiar pleasure and attention; but he yet little imagin'd that he was relating the circumstances of so odd an adventure, before a person who had many years made it a point to stand up against the whole world, in defence of this lady's chastity; or how severely he cut this champion of her honour to the heart, when at the end of the story he apologiz'd for the liberty he might seem to have taken with the lady's character in it, by observing that he suppos'd there was not much in it, as he presum'd this lady did not pretend to have any character at all.

## C H A P. XVII.

*Character of mr. Sneer — an attack upon Loveill in the bantering strain, finely conducted, but not very successful.*

THE gentleman I have mentioned to your ladyship, continued mrs. Meanwell, as so sensibly affected with every thing that concern'd this lady is mr Sneer, a person well known among the polite world for the last fifty years, for perhaps the best face, and the best understanding of any man of his time; and for having had the best method in the world of playing the fool with both of them. No man has pass'd through life with so little concern, or so much satisfaction as this now reverend gentleman. Not a nobleman of the present age but thinks himself happy in his acquaintance, as a man better than most people able to advise; better than any body, to entertain: and there is scarce one of his present set of noble friends whom he cannot assure, that he had the honour of the same sort of familiarity with his father.

Scarce any man would have been more  
able

able to have made a figure in the graver and more serious parts of life, than this gentleman; but he set out with the unluckly principle, that it was more eligible to be the facetious mr. Sneer, than the more serious man of that name, and from this single wrong turn, every thing that a wise man would wish had been otherwise in his life, has had its origin. The man who establishes it as a rule, that it is better to make people laugh, than to make them wise, or to make them merry, than to make them happy, will always find himself more engag'd in the service of their pleasures, than in that of their interests; and will in consequence be always rather lov'd than esteem'd by them.

I have already observed to you, that to have sense and spirit made the great qualification to be well receiv'd upon, in this polite assembly, I should have added, that it is not the having the general reputation of these qualities, that will pass among people so well qualified to scrutinize the pretention. It is not the telling a good story alone, that can entitle a man to the place of one of this company; and in short, tho' every body, except mr. Sneer was very highly entertain'd with Loveill's narrative it was not allow'd a sufficient credential.

It



It is an establish'd rule of the house that every body in it has a right to be as free, as merry as he pleases with every other; and that no offence is to be taken at any thing that is said within those happy walls, farther than the taking as freely the same sort of liberties with the aggressor. In consequence of this and for the forming a true judgment of every person's understanding, who is to have the honour of being admitted among this happy set of people, there is a general test establish'd which every body is to go thro' in his first visit there, who is ever likely to make a second. This which I am now mentioning to your ladyship was mr. Loveill's first visit, and the story he had told gave a very fair opportunity for the playing the artifice of a concerted scene upon him, in which many of the company had their settled parts; and in which the test indeed prov'd more than ordinarily sharp as the principal of the opposite party was to be the severe and artful mr. Sneer, and that gentleman not in his common strain of merry mischief alone, but as heighten'd by the offence he must needs have taken at the story.

A look was enough to set all the company upon their guard on this occasion. The sport began by an excessive commendation of the address and artifice Loveill had

had conducted the amour with: mr. Sneer who needed not indeed on this occasion to counterfeit a passion express'd great indignation at the freedom, the gentleman had taken with that lady's reputation, frankly professed that he suspected his veracity, and to make way for the opening scene demanded of him, how long this was ago, and upon what terms he now stood with the lady?

Your lover very gallantly answer'd that he did not set down the day of the month when affairs of this trivial kind happen'd to him; but that he had been three months at Paris, from which place he was just return'd, and that he was able to recollect, that the amour he had been speaking of was immediately prior to his making that journey; as he remember'd very well that he set out a week sooner on it than he had intended, on occasion of his having made the necessity of it to him a pretence to get rid of the lady's company, of which he had then had somewhat too much, and had no other prospect but from the getting a sea between them to avoid having a great deal more.

The old gentleman whose passion did not let him see that this last flourish was only thrown in to revenge the too free manner, in which he had given his sense of the story,  
grew

grew outrageous on so unmannerly a contempt of the lady : he begg'd the pardon of the company for speaking somewhat freely before them ; but he added that he could not help saying this was the most scandalous piece of vanity he had ever met with ; and that he was very certain from the purport of the conclusion what he was to believe of the rest of the gentleman's declaration. He concluded with telling mr. Loveill aside, that this was carrying things a great deal too far ; that there were some things which might, and some which might not be jested about : and that he should very soon shew him the folly of such boasting histories.

People who in this feat of joy know that they are not to refuse to be every one of them the butt of the company by turn, were not a little entertain'd with the passion mr. Sneer was thrown into ; and every one joining in the spiriting him up in it, by concluding that the story was a very good one, but that they could not believe it was true ; he was at length work'd to that pitch that he declar'd he would go the next day to London, to enquire into it, and if he might be permitted would bring the lady back with him to confute the pretended ravisher.

Every

Every body encourag'd him in the intent, and he, in consequence, set out with more anger than he ever had in his heart before, for London the next morning; with private instructions not only to bring the lady back with him, but to engage her to deny the whole affair first, by writing; and when she came to heighten the scene, by absolutely denying the ever having seen the gentleman who pretended to all this familiarity with her before.

To be well received in this honourable company, it had long been a settled point, that the person, besides the qualifications of sense and understanding, must be a man of probity and honour, and of courage. Here was, by means of the angry and well instructed Mr. Sneer, a glorious scene laid to try Loveill on the score of vanity and lying; and this old gentleman was no sooner dispatch'd, than another design was concerted to prove him as to courage.

It was computed at what time that gentleman cou'd reach London, and at what time a letter might possibly be received from him. The intermediate space gave many opportunities of enquiring into farther particulars, in regard to this famous amour, and noting down all the answers to them, upon which the gallant was to be try'd at the lady's arrival: but though



this was all the use made of the time by the company, your lover, whose discernment is too deep to suffer the cunningest imposition to pass upon him, saw that he had a game to play alone, against a very powerful and very numerous party; he soon determined that the true triumph over these sort of plots was the disconcerting them; and that consequently his business was to disappoint every scheme laid by the company, and to puzzle and confound them to the utmost.

With this intent he wrote to a certain gentleman in town, who at that time had the absolute dominion over the lady, and with whom he had an intimate acquaintance, in the following terms,

*DURING your late journey into \* \* \*, I have done you an injury, which the first reparation I ought to make, is the acknowledging to you.—I have had your mistress a fortnight of the time. I need not tell you I wou'd not have done this, had I known she belonged to you.—She had the address perfectly to conceal it from me; and 'tis but this moment that I know it.—If you don't receive her after this, I'll gladly take her off your hands:—but I wou'd neither have you nor myself the dupe to any body else.—In short,*

*short, if your own honour is no longer concern'd in this affair, let me recommend mine so far to you, as to conjure you not to let Mr. Sneer at present see her, speak, or write to her.—Under the cloak of friendship to you, he is to get free admittance to her. His business is to take her out of town. He will tell you he brings her to the place whence I date this.—You will be able to guess at the business; and may believe that I am a very good judge how much truth there is in the scheme of bringing her hither.—You have address, my dear \*\*\*\*\* use it—disappoint a scheme you have notice of; and preserve this secret inviolable, till you see,*

\*\*\*\*\*

Your \*\*\*\*\*s

*Most obedient servant,*

LOVEILL.

The rage of a man who lov'd, and who had suppos'd he was belov'd in the tenderest manner by Mrs. W——; his vengeance against the person, who under a pretence of friendship was now going to rob him of her; and who (as anger always suspects too much) he took it for granted had conducted the former scene of treachery; all added to the pride of a man, fond of being thought a master of address; and

now put upon the exerting it, by a person who must be a judge how well he executed it; and this in so interesting an affair as the first pleasure of his life, all conspired to give the intended force to Loveill's scheme.

Sneer, who had out-rodè the post, had been about five minutes before the letter with the person it was directed to, and had just had time to mention his request of taking the lady to the place from whence it was dated. There had not been time for his friend's returning an answer, when a servant brought in the letter. He turned pale as he read it; and after many emotions, which nothing but the injunction of secrecy with which the letter concluded cou'd have given him power to suppress, he took his leave of Mr. Sneer in an abrupt manner; lock'd himself up with the lady, and gave orders that they were neither of them at home to him till farther notice.

Here was a master-stroke of policy of your lover's, that alone disconcerted the whole scheme laid against him, and involv'd every part of the design in a perplexity wholly inexplicable, 'till himself shou'd think proper to unravel it. This letter, which had thrown every thing into confusion, and had set the seal of secrecy over it: he very well knew how to explain all

to his friend when he pleas'd ; but in the mean time Mr. Sneer did not know whether he had best stay in London to wait a favourable moment, return to the company without being able to give any account of his commission, or hang himself at once, to put an end to a perplexity he saw no way out of, and evade the scandal of so shameful a defeat. The company, who had prepar'd a long list of assertions from Mr. Loveill, all which they knew the letter the lady was instructed to write wou'd give the lie to, were impatient for it, and more so for the scene that was to follow it at her coming.

Every thing was profound silence, and every face confess'd vexation and disappointment, when the post arrived without a line either from one or the other of the parties. Loveill enjoy'd the scene ; but for the present he suppress'd his triumph.

There was among the company who had concerted this frustrated scheme, a gentleman famous in the coffee-houses for the length of his sword, and the masterly skill he possesses in that species of wit some time since laugh'd out of the world by Mr. Addison, under the name of *Bite*, and now reviv'd among the polite world, under that of *Humbug*. This gentleman, who has all the address of a neighbouring na-



tion in which he was born, without any tincture of the absurdity of it, after calling a council of war among the party, propos'd the making up the disappointment of a letter from Mr. Sneer, by writing one himself in his name. Every body applauded the proposal; and the hero, little imagining what sort of an enemy he was making by his plot, took the whole management of the matter upon himself.

Supper was over, and the company were entertaining one another with talking of indifferent things, when a servant enter'd the room, dirty, and affecting to be drunk, and with a letter as dirty as himself in his hand. He deliver'd it with humbly begging pardon, and confessing that he had been made to drink too much when he went to the post-house for the letters, and that in his return he had dropp'd several of them; but that he had been back to seek for them, and had found them all in the road: that the rest were for the servants, but this he found was for *Captain Brave*.

The fellow was dismiss'd with a very severe reproof; and the captain, who had taken care to direct his counterfeit letter to himself, that he might have an opportunity of introducing it properly, no sooner had opened it, than he told the company, with

with great satisfaction in his face, that it was from his friend Sneer.

Several of the party took care to observe, that the captain smil'd as he cast his eye cursorily over it, and begg'd they might share in his mirth, if the letter contained no secret. The captain pretended a sort of confusion, and after a short pause answer'd, with some deliberation, "No;—  
 "there is no great secret in it.—And indeed the company have a right to it, as it  
 "relates to the business he went to town about.—But, continued he, there is a  
 "gentleman concern'd in it, who I believe  
 "does not know enough of the rules of this  
 "house to hear it properly. Mr. Loveill,  
 "continued he, you are the person I mean.  
 "You are to know, Sir, that nothing said  
 "or done under this roof is ever resented  
 "out of doors, or taken notice of afterwards  
 "in a serious manner. All the freedoms  
 "we take with one another are to be subject to no other return, but that of others  
 "of the same kind.—If you are of this  
 "mind, and will give me leave, I'll read  
 "out the letter; but if there is any danger  
 "of a quarrel about it, I'll immediately  
 "sacrifice it to the safety of my friend, by  
 "committing it to the flames."

Loveill told him he had his free permission to disclose it, and his promise to take no

other notice of it than himself wou'd have done on the same occasion ; on which the captain, with an audible voice, read as follows

Dear Brave,

**I** Am horribly tir'd with an uncomfortable journey, but cannot sleep till I have opened the beginning of a glorious scene to you. — I have seen Mrs. W—— Loveill is a lying coxcomb :—he never spoke to her in his life. All the familiarities that ever pass'd between them are, that behind the scenes one night he attempted to touch her neck, and she return'd the civility by spitting in his face : a dirty compliment from a fine lady ; but she apologizes for it by saying it was suited to the dirty occasion. What has farther pass'd between them is, that on his coming to bully her at her own house about it the next day, Thomas obey'd his instructions to a tittle, and very heroically kick'd him out of doors.——This is but a taste of what I have to tell you ;—there is a full feast behind ; but I leave her at supper to give you this. We shall be with you by to-morrow night.

I am your most obedient

SNIEER.

The

The company pretended a strange surprize at the contents of this letter.—One said, Well, if any body but Mr. Sneer had writ this, positively I cou'd not have believ'd it. Another, Well, I see all men are alike ; but———. A thousand whippers of this sort had gone round the table, when the captain, a little disconcerted by not seeing that confusion in Loveill's face which this home attack was intended to have rais'd, made a bold push to put him out of countenance, by giving him a gentle tap on the shoulder, and telling him, it was not worth while to be so uneasy about this trifle, as he saw he was.—“ Every young fellow  
 “ in the world, says he, will boast of adventures of this kind ; 'tis only pity Sneer  
 “ was here, otherwise it would have gone  
 “ down with us very well.”

Loveill answered him with a great deal of spirit ; “ Faith, Sir, I have not the grace  
 “ to find out that I have any of that confusion about me you are pleas'd to compliment me with. I suppose this sort of  
 “ raillery is the fashion of the place ; and  
 “ you shall immediately know my sense of it,  
 “ by seeing the answer I shall make to it.”

Loveill call'd for pen and ink, and retired to a side-table for two or three minutes ; after which he return'd with his answer to the letter ; and putting it into



captain Brave's hand, desired him to favour the company with reading it.

The captain took it of him with great pleasure, and throwing every way round him looks full of conscious triumph, and promising a great deal of mirth from the effect of his letter, began to read very audibly:

SIR,

*A*N account of a pretended conversation with Mrs. W—— was just now read here.—It requires no farther notice from me than the telling you, and all the company at this place, before whom I have desired this to be read, that the author of the letter in which it is contain'd, is a liar, a scoundrel, and a rascal; and that he dar'd not have written a syllable of it, but for the known protection the place where it was to be read afforded him:—that if he chuses to acknowledge these names, and put up what I have said of him, we are about upon equal terms: but if he is in a humour to dispute them, I shall not be easily brought to believe that he has seen Mrs. W——, since he saw

Her very faithful admirer,

LOVEILL.

It

It was observed by the company, who did not at this time much interest themselves about what they laugh'd at, so they laugh'd at something, that the captain did not read this letter quite so fluently as he had done the other. He falter'd at the words liar and scoundrel, which, as they were artfully apply'd not to Mr. Sneer, but to *the author of the letter he had just read*, he very plainly perceiv'd were levell'd at himself. If he had had any remaining doubt about this, Mr. Loveill's address to him, on his concluding the letter, in which he desired him to write the superscription, for that he knew better what was the gentleman's direction than himself, was deliver'd in such a tone of voice, that it shew'd very plainly he meant the captain shou'd not only be very sensible of it, but shou'd perceive too that himself knew very well to whom he had written that defiance.

The company saw this, and they interested themselves to prevent matters going any farther, and to convince Mr. Loveill that Sneer had written the letter, and the captain, that Loveill believ'd he had. His answer was properly directed by one of the company, who was nearest the ink-stand, and put into the post for London. This was a glorious addition to the perplexity of the unfortunate emissary it went to, who  
had

had before more than enough to make him mad.

During the remainder of the evening, Loveill, whose anger cou'd not satisfy itself with the ample revenge he had already taken, aim'd many cutting things at the captain, under the shadow of Mr. Sneer's name; and the matter had probably come to too good an understanding between them, had not a very spirited little man of the company taken up the cause in the captain's place. He insisted on it, that he knew the letter to be Sneer's, for that he knew his hand; that he was very well assur'd the old gentleman knew what he said; and that himself knew both him and the lady so well, that he wou'd venture to lay five guineas that she had said every thing that was hinted at in the letter, and that she wou'd determine the bett by declaring that she had done so.

Loveill, who had now by a multitude of additional abuses sufficiently reveng'd the affront the captain intended him, was not sorry to see the quarrel got into other hands, where it was not so likely to become more serious than it deserv'd, as while in his. He answered his new antagonist, that wagers were a sort of arguments that did not do much credit to the understandings of people who us'd them; and that  
it

it wou'd be paying a very ill compliment to the lady's honour, if he shou'd suppose it only an even chance whether she declar'd the truth or not. That he therefore cou'd no more accept the wager upon equal terms, than he cou'd express a distrust of her by absolutely refusing it; but that if the gentleman wou'd give him leave to lay him a hundred guineas to five, he wou'd very willingly submit it to the decision he had propos'd.

The wager was accepted on these terms; and the company, when Loveill was gone, determin'd to sweat him a little in the subject of it, by making him lose, though they did not intend he shou'd ever pay it. Upon this plan one of the ladies, who had been always so great a benefactor to Mrs. W—— in her benefits, that it was not to be suppos'd she cou'd be refus'd any thing she ask'd of her, wrote to her; requesting it as the greatest favour she cou'd ever do to her, and as an obligation to a set of company that might be of infinite service to her hereafter, that she would answer a certain question which wou'd be propos'd to her by the same post, in such a manner as shou'd lose a wager Mr. Loveill had laid about her, and abuse and scandalize him as much as possible; telling her that she need not spare ill language, and adding,  
that



that it was only for a piece of sport ; and that she had the promise of the whole company, that she shou'd come to no harm about it.

Loveill was allow'd by every body to be the properest person to propose the question to the lady, as he had the greatest concern in it ; and so sure were they of success, from their own scheme, that they even gave him leave to write to her in what terms he pleas'd, and did not insist on seeing his letter.

Too much appearance of openness often betrays a design. Loveill, who after a short absence, which he had contriv'd on purpose to give them an opportunity of concerting their designs, under a pretence of writing letters, return'd ; and when he observ'd their eager frankness, and professions of impartial dealing, he easily saw the bottom of the plot, and determin'd, under the same shew of open frankness, to destroy it.

He knew very well that the lady concern'd had such a sort of dependance on the company, that they would take it for granted she wou'd do every thing they pleas'd ; and on this sole consideration the plot was apparent : but he knew also, that the letter he had written to town wou'd prevent Sneer from doing any thing, and

†

that

that it would be easy for him to counterplot all the rest. He stept to a corner of the room for a moment, and then return'd with the following letter, which he desir'd the company wou'd read, that they might know he us'd no indirect means in procuring a favourable answer.

Dearest P \* \* \*,

*A Paper has been read here, accusing you of speaking disrespectfully of me.—I need not tell you it is not necessary to say any thing to convince me of the falsity of the assertion; I know you better. But to clear you to some people here who believe it, I have laid a wager on your innocence, which your own testimony is to decide.*

LOVEILL.

*P. S. You'll oblige me if you won't see Mr. Sneer till I come to town; which, if you were not there, wou'd not be these three months.*

Had Loveill suppos'd his interest with the lady stronger than that of the company, he wou'd have taken a little more pains to have obtained a decree in his favour, but none of the party saw that he had given up the point in that view, and that he only play'd this game, to affect the letting them know, that he was sensible she  
lov'd

lov'd him at no common rate. The desiring her to banish a man who had always been father, brother, friend, every thing to her, appear'd such a romantic request to them, that there needed not the artifice of adding to the request the contempt of throwing it into a postscript, to make them all conclude, that no man ever had a share of vanity equal to that of the person who desir'd it.

They all agreed that Loveill had stated his case fairly and disinterestedly enough, but they banter'd him most egregiously on the presumption of success which he put on upon it. He told them in answer, that it would be right for them to be merry till the lady's answer came, because it would be his turn to be so afterwards ; and added not a little to the height of the scene, by expressing the greatest astonishment in the world at their thinking him a coxcomb, for his mentioning his success in an adventure, in which he cou'd not conceive that the subject allow'd it to come under the name of vanity.

He was very sensible of the success of his first letter from the real silence of Mr. Sneer ; and he, on this foundation, offer'd a second wager upon the same terms with the former, that tho' he had not requested the banishment of that gentleman in a  
very

very pressing manner, it would be comply'd with.

The wager was accepted, and the company had their expectations of the confusion of Mr. Loveill on the lady's answer, not a little heightened, by the assurance of success he every hour took care to express among them.

The return of a post was never expected with more impatience than on this occasion. Mrs. W——'s letter was the subject of every body's hopes; and, in order to mortify the lover the more thoroughly, it had been desir'd to be directed to himself, upon his promise to read it to the company. This last condition was owing to the address of the defeated captain, who had cunningly contriv'd this way to be even with him, for making him read the letter that had call'd him so many hard names.



## C H A P. XVIII.

*A very remarkable occurrence explained.—Loveill gets the better of all his antagonists, and returns the behaviour of Mrs. W— as it deserves.*

THE fortnight's acquaintance Mr. Loveill had been happy enough to enjoy with this lady, had given him an opportunity of often seeing her writing; and by great good fortune he had still about him a passage in the Relapse, which she had thought applicable to something that had pass'd between them, and had transcrib'd in one of her good-natur'd fits. This gave him an opportunity of easily counterfeiting her hand, and of putting whatever answer he intended should be made to his letter, into what would be supposed by every body under the circumstances it was to be produced in, to be her writing.

The artful Loveill took his time to form a letter suited to the occasion, and to mimic her hand; but long before the true letter could possibly arrive, he had the counterfeit ready in his pocket. The company were not risen from dinner the next post-

post-day, when the letters were brought in: among them, to the great joy of every body, was one directed to — Loveill, Esq: this was no sooner given into his hands, than he declared it to be Mrs. W—'s; but putting it into his pocket for the present, he told them they should not hear it till dinner was removed, that they might have no other employment for their mouths to interrupt their laughing.

Mrs. W— had no mind to part with Loveill; but the interest of such a number of friends was a little heavier with her than her passion, and taking it for granted that she could at any time make up a breach with a lover, she was mean enough to be influenced by them, and to bely her heart in a letter full of the grossest abuse that ever came from a woman's pen. The consequence of this was, that Mr. Loveill not being of quite so forgiving a temper as the soft-hearted people she had been used to have concerns with, returned a second letter, which she sent him by the next post, to excuse herself, unopened; and could never be brought to see her again, or to have any farther concern with her, than the giving her an annual present of five guineas, by way of commemoration of the beginning of their acquaintance, for a ticket at her benefit.

Your

Your lover, who knew so much of the woman, that he easily foresaw what would be the purport of her real letter, did not at this time give himself the trouble to examine it; but taking out the counterfeit from the same pocket into which he had put the real one, he opened it, and read as follows :

Perjur'd and ungrateful Loveill,

*HOW* do you dare after a silence of four months to write to me? or what am I to understand by your note? Am I intended the sacrifice to some new mistress? Is your vanity to be indulged by exposing me to the company you are with? or do I owe a letter that love or gratitude could never bring me, to the pitiful hopes of winning your wager? —Fool that I am, I can believe neither.—No: I know you are ashamed of your perfidy, and have only invented this pretence to write to me.—Who should dare to tell you that I had rail'd at what you too well know it is my folly, my misery, my destruction to doat on with an ill-return'd passion?

Sneer is banish'd—all the world shall be so if you command it—but what is my return for sacrificing every thing to you? Can you be so near me, and yet refuse to fly to those  
arms,

*arms, where nothing but yourself can ever be agreeable.*

*Pardon the wildness of a passion you know you have given too much occasion to, and let me see you —*

Your distracted

W ———.

Loveill had no sooner read this letter, which perfectly well tallied with the account he had given of his adventure, than he threw it down open upon the table. The company acknowledged the hand; they thought they had seen it brought by the post; and, in fine, with all the confusion and uneasiness in their countenances, that became a set of disappointed projectors, they acknowledged their error, and adjudged Loveill both his wagers. It was in vain that the lady long afterwards attempted to clear herself of the disrespect she had been accus'd of having shewn to the letter they had written to her, by denying every article of the answer Loveill had read, and by producing a copy of the real letter she had sent him: nay, it was in vain that she at length owned the effects of her real letter to him; owned the quarrel it had occasioned between them, and assured every body that it was not even then



## 214 The ADVENTURES of

then made up, nor probably ever would be: and even went so far as to produce the succeeding letter she had written to beg his pardon, with the blank cover in which he had enclos'd it back to her.

Nothing was of force against what appeared demonstration: her hand had been well known, the letter had been read by every body: it was evident all the effects of Mr. Loveill's slightest requests were answered; there was no denying that Sneer was banish'd for the time; that she avoided coming to the company, tho' invited; and, in fine, the perplexity on all hands has never been unravell'd, till I now disclose it to your ladyship as I received it soon afterwards from the mouth of the gentleman to another of whose artifices yourself have, in some measure, fallen a sacrifice.

### C H A P. XIX.

*Loveill arrives in London.—Picks up a mistress at Putney bowling-green.  
—A very cunning scheme disconcerted.*

**W**HILE Mrs. Meanwell was entertaining lady Juliet with this history of her lover, and according to the custom  
of

of the world giving her a lesson of caution, that might have been of excellent use to her, if it had not come after the accident, that it should have guarded her against, had happen'd; Loveill who was very much in earnest in his search after a wife, and who was not only sensible that here were two people got together, neither of whom he had any desire to see, but that the place where lady Juliet was could never offer any thing else worth his looking at, no sooner found that her ladyship did not seem in a humour to leave Bath, than he determin'd to do it himself.

He immediately took coach for London, and on his arrival there, enquiring what were the places of publick resort at that season, his landlord, of whom he had ask'd this information, and who was a very honest fellow, and had a brotherly friendship for his friend at the bowling-green house at Putney, told him, that was the place where most company of all met, and that the morrow was the publick day there.

Loveill, who was determin'd nothing should interrupt his scheme, and found that if he omitted the present opportunity, he should not have another of a week or fortnight, resolved to forget his weariness, and make a visit to the place that was so  
strongly

strongly recommended to him. Lady Juliet had made our hero so nice in his ideas of beauty, that he examined the whole female circle present, without being able to think favourably of any one of them for a long time ; at length he observed a tall well-made young creature, engag'd with two other women in a party of gentlemen, whose brown faces, and white lapelles, declared them to belong to the navy.

He easily saw that the other females of the party made no figure in these gentlemen's opinion, but that all their devoirs were paid to the lady he had first fixed his eye upon, and whom, as he observed more and more nearly, he found to grow more and more upon him as a beauty.

The pride of attacking the handsomest woman in the place, and the expected triumph of carrying off a mistress from such a formidable set of rivals, soon determin'd a man of Loveill's turn, who had also in favour of his determined search, long before resolv'd never to fall into a large company without attempting somebody in it till he had fixed upon one worth sticking to, left him no choice what to do in a place where there appeared but one woman worth notice.

The uniform of the sea-officers who attended the lady shewed their several ranks,  
and

and a man of Loveill's address could not be long in determining what was the true method of engaging them in a pursuit, which would make them quit the lady. He had observed on his first coming into the place, among the old people who walk'd quietly about the gardens, a party, of which he saw there were two people, who were of the number of those, that it is every man's interest who would rise in the navy, to be well with. These gentlemen were of his intimate acquaintance, and not suspecting the honourable nature of the office he was engaging them in, they very readily let him join them in company with the gallants of the woman he was aiming at.

The lady was so well acquainted with these gentlemen's rank, that she soon determined within herself that Loveill, who was so intimate and familiar with them, must be a man of some consequence. The gaiety of dress which lady Juliet's taste for finery had thrown him into, pleaded also not a little in his favour; and it was with considerable triumph that she soon afterwards understood, by the regard his eyes paid to her, that she was not indifferent to him.

The officers who saw that it was owing to him that they were so well received, where it was of so much consequence to



them to be so, could not prevail upon themselves, tho' they saw evidently enough his drift and intent in it, to take any notice of it. Loveill had expected no other consequences: he had now studied men with as much attention as he had books, and he knew very well, if preferment and a mistress stood in competition, which would give way.

After some civil things which the lady had received very civilly, he told her, that he had joined the gentleman to people that might be useful to them; and he believed the best thing they could do would be to leave them together. The lady had her friends welfare, to say nothing of her own, so much at heart, that she made no scruple of consenting: she drew off her party, including Mr. Loveill, at the end of the next walk; and as she had two other women with her, she was easily prevailed upon to take his coach on to Richmond, and to dine there with him, instead of doing it where they were, with the captains.

Loveill, who had calculated all his schemes before he set out on his wife-hunting expedition, had easily foreseen that he should be led into expences in the prosecution of it, that by no means suited his fortune; but the short period he had devoted to the attempt, as he had determined it should

should be concluded, or laid aside for ever, within the space of one year, made him very easy under whatever extravagances he found it convenient or necessary to run into during that time.

The perfect unconcern with which the lady saw him order an expensive dinner, and his gallant behaviour to every body about him, confirmed her in the opinion she had at first taken up of his being a man of very great fortune. She bless'd the day she had devoted to Putney, and ador'd every accident that had concurr'd to the bringing Loveill and her together, not having the least idea that all that appeared such wonderful chance-work to her, was the effect of a concerted scheme in her new lover; and that indeed with people of his turn, accidents have scarce any share in the occurrences of life.

The afternoon was spent in great gaiety on all sides, till it grew time to get into the coach: it was evening before the company got back to London; and after setting down the friends of the lady at the end of Halfmoon-street, our lovers had a very agreeable tête-à-tête, (to use the phrase in all its senses,) in the coach to Covent-garden. Loveill knew too much of the world not to see, as soon as he had join'd the lady, that she was not the sort of per-

son it was his business to be in search of; and had only pursued his gallantry during the remainder of the day with her, because nothing better offered. He had form'd so just an opinion of her, notwithstanding the airs of quality she had affected to put on at their first meeting, that he was not at all surprized when the coachman, who had taken her directions about the setting her down at home, stopp'd at a coffee-house. He handed the lady in, delivered her up safe to her mother, and immediately called for the most expensive things the place afforded.

His whole scheme on this occasion terminated in the intent of giving the lady a supper at her own house, and after that taking his leave of her, without any intent of renewing his visit: but fate ordered matters otherwise; he had discharged his coach when he ordered supper, and had sat chatting so late after it, that when he was for going away there was neither coach nor chair to be had; and upon recollection, another unlucky circumstance against him was, that he had not provided himself with a lodging.

The good lady of the house, who had soon determined with herself from his behaviour, that he was a man of no little consequence, was highly pleased with finding, on this occasion,

occasion, that he was a country gentleman just arriv'd at London: she saw the respect he paid her daughter, and she made no doubt but it might be an easy thing to prevail with such a man, as she took him to be, to marry her. She offer'd him a bed in the house, told him she frequently accommodated sober gentlemen who kept good hours in that manner, and should be very proud of him for a lodger while he staid in town.

Loveill, who had form'd no scheme upon the girl, received the proposal with an unfeign'd indifference, but told the mother, he should be very happy to be so agreeably situated: they parted for the night, the girl to dream of dress, equipage, and Mrs. Loveill; and the lover (as she understood the matter) to a sleep as tranquil as indolence and indifference could procure him.

The mother had long been upon the scheme of making this handsome wench's fortune: it was with this intent, that she had favoured the attempts made upon her by all the gentlemen who frequented her house, depending very firmly, for the preservation of her chastity, upon the doctrine she had been some years inculcating into her, that it was no woman's interest to be a whore; and concluding, that the



eagerness of a long fast would made some of these lovers swallow the bait, tho' matrimony was annexed to it, when they found she was not to be had upon any other terms. Loveill, who had founded her every way a thousand times over during their days courtship, found she had absolutely preserved her virtue in all the attacks that had been made upon her; and tho' he could have been well enough satisfy'd with her for a mistress, he did not chuse to purchase that pleasure at the expence of the pain he knew it would afterwards be to his remembrance, to have debauch'd an innocent creature.

He behaved to her for three or four days with an unconstrain'd civility, but without any thing farther that looked like love. The wench cried with vexation; and the mother began to be in continual uneasiness at the slow progress of an amour, which she foresaw would come to nothing, if not hurried to marriage immediately. Loveill was gone out on a visit one morning, when these females laid their heads coolly together, about the bringing their design into execution. The mother proposed drawing him into marriage by jealousy, frightening him into it by a challenge, and many other means; all which the daughter saw plainly enough from what she

she observed of Loveill's temper, would prove defective. At length she proposed a very different scheme from them all, which was no other than the getting him into drink, and the having a parson ready to take advantage of the first fit of fondness that should come upon him, before he grew sober. The mother gave up every thing to this promising scheme, and urg'd the bringing it about as quickly as possible. Loveill's natural sobriety, rendered it difficult to be attempted, but the young lady remembering that he had drank more freely in their country expedition, than she had ever seen him do since, another journey to Richmond was determined to be the plan, and a May-fair parson was sent for to be in readiness, and was dress'd in a sailor's habit to avoid suspicion. This gentleman was to attend behind the coach, in quality of footman; and a couple of female friends, who could be trusted to keep sober, under the appearance of drinking, were pitched upon to be of the party, and to be the witnesses.

The whole scheme was perfectly laid, before the person who was to be the victim to it returned; the ladies were sent for to drink tea, and Mr. Loveill invited to meet them. Miss dress'd herself in the most

## 224 The ADVENTURES of

advantageous manner ; and in the midst of a great deal of good humour, one of the company accidentally said, Richmond was a very pleasant place. Loveill readily saw there was a scheme upon him in this, but as he had no idea that it aimed at any thing farther than his pocket, he readily gave into it, and desired he might treat them there the next morning. The old woman rejoiced in the success of their scheme, and every one of the young ones readily came into it.

Mr. Loveill supp'd out that evening, and gave the ladies by that means, a very favourable opportunity of concerting the several circumstances of the plan : the parties were all called together : the parson had his instructions to be as quick as possible in hurrying over the ceremony, and a bond of two hundred pounds was given him, payable a month after marriage. The witnesses were cautioned to keep sober, tho' under the appearance of drinking freely to tempt him to do the same ; and finally miss was put in mind, that her fortune wholly depended on that evening's conduct. The mother cautioned her, to be sure not to drink too much ; but as her lover got in liquor, to use every artifice to entice him to grow fond of her ; and  
in

in fine, when he could neither speak nor stand, then to call in the parson.

Every thing thus settled, the parties retir'd severally to bed, but all in the same house, in order to be ready : the coach was early at the door, and miss begged leave that the sailor who had brought up Mr. Loveill's shoes in the morning, might go behind it to help to wait on them at dinner ; for that they were but poorly attended when at Richmond before.

The oddity of this request alone, was enough to have bred suspicion in a temper so prone to it as that of Mr. Loveill ; but the whole plot was at once laid open to him on the mentioning it, by his recollecting that the fellow had been so little upon his guard, as to come up to him with a rose in his hat ; and on his complaining that one of the shoes was dusty, he remembered that he had pulled a black glove out of his pocket to wipe it with. A rose and black gloves were things so very singular in the dress of a common sailor, that he had then taken it for granted, the fellow had knock'd down some parson the night before, and robbed him of them : but now the manner of the parties being brought about, the readiness of the people who were to be of it, who he saw had lain in the house ; and twenty other circumstances



## 226 The ADVENTURES of

in the behaviour both of the mother and daughter, conspired to make it palpable and evident, that the design was to make him drunk, and marry him.

The supreme joy of Loveill's heart, has always been to counterplot people who paid his understanding so ill a compliment, as to suppose they could impose upon him; and the instance of lady Juliet may serve to shew, that the great passion of his soul was revenge; which his natural violence of temper would never let him believe sufficient, unless it was at least ten times greater than the subject of it deserv'd. He was master enough of his countenance, not to give the company the least suspicion that he saw thro' the scheme they had laid against him: he got into the coach with great good-humour, and ordered the driver to stop at Putney bowling-green to breakfast, after having privately given him directions to lose his way thither, and never to stop till he came to the door of the house he was ordered to at Richmond.

The fellow obeyed his instructions punctually. He was no sooner alighted from his box, than Loveill pretending some very urgent occasion, stept out of the coach in a hurry, ordered the landlord to conduct the ladies into a room, and gave his coachman the wink to follow him. He was no  
sooner

sooner got into the garden with him, than retiring to a corner, and putting his hand in his pocket, he told him that he found he was an honest fellow, and gave him a guinea. That, says he, is only an earnest of what I'll give you, if you mind my instructions.—You will not be wanted till to-morrow morning : all you have to do in the mean time is to watch that fellow who rode behind the coach : take him into the kitchen with you ; never let him be once out of your sight ; make him drunk as possible, and keep him so ; but take care to keep yourself sober, and to have somebody constantly with you, to be witness that you are so, and that the fellow you watch has never given you the slip a moment.—Do this carefully, and I will give you five guineas more, and the person you take in with you a guinea beside : but if you fail in the least article, neither of you have a farthing.

Matters were no sooner settled in this manner than the gallant return'd to his company, made an apology for his absence, grew excessively gay and good-humour'd, and complimented his mistress in a warmer manner than he had ever done in his life.

Dinner was served ; the good-humour continued ; no sailor appear'd, but the lady was in no concern about that, as she  
knew

knew they should not want him till evening: for it was a settled thing between miss and her mother, that she was to lie abroad, in order to have sufficient proof of their bedding together, as well as of their marriage.

Loveill saw towards afternoon that they try'd every scheme to allure him to drink, and by their shewing no inclinations to go, as evening came on, he was sufficiently confirm'd in the justice of his suspicion as to their design upon him, he order'd supper in a bed-chamber; and as he found they were all very cautious of drinking, tho' very sollicitous with him to do it, he feed the waiter to put in half the quantity of rack into each of the succeeding bottles.

The backwardness Loveill shewed to drink after supper, induc'd the ladies to do it more than their instructions allowed, in order to encourage him; and miss was not backward in her part of the scheme, by offering him every sort of allurements to her person. The effects of the liquor began to appear on the weaker of the two female friends of the lady first: the other two very charitably conducted her to the bed, and supposing that lying down was a properer posture than sitting for a person in her condition, they carefully laid her upon it. It would have now been too late

late for the others to have profited, by the example of their fallen companion, had they been cool enough to reflect on it. They had already each her full dose; and in short, under pretence of comforting the sick lady, they laid themselves down by her.

Loveill was by this time drunk enough, tho' not quite so much so as they: he fastned the door, put out the candles, and laid himself down among them. The morning light awaked the women as from a dream; as for Loveill's part, he had been awake some time, laughing at his prosperous mischief. Nothing could equal the confusion and distraction with which the three ladies perceiv'd, that they had been sleeping all night with a drunken rake; who they found very plainly, either out of love or malice, had taken ample revenge upon them all, for the scheme they had laid upon him; and which it was now plain enough he had discover'd.

After more reproaches than perhaps any man ever had, or ever deserved at one time before, the coach was order'd for London; but the heroine of the story considering that she could be no more than ruin'd, requested of her friends to return to town without her; and as it would be impossible to conceal what had happened,

to



## 230 The ADVENTURES of

to tell her the whole truth, excepting for their own misfortunes; and to add, that as her lying abroad would make a noise about the place, she chose to stay a week or a fortnight where she was, till the bustle that would be about it should be over. Loveill was extremely pleased with the spirit of the girl; he gave her a hearty kiss, and telling her she should command every thing of him that she ought to have expected, dismissed her friends, paid the coachman, and made an interest to the bishop against the parson, the consequence of which was, that he was condemned to lose, (what when the sentence came to be put in execution, it prov'd he never had) holy orders.

### C H A P. XX.

*Loveill attacks the celebrated Cynthia at Ranelagh.—A sham courtship of a duenna.*

THE success of this scheme had like to have spoil'd a very honest fellow. Loveill had hitherto entertained no notions of a dissolute course: he was determined to take every method of making life as agreeable to him as he could; and it was upon this scheme that he had set himself

self

self about the seeking for a wife as necessary to it in many different capacities.

He now found himself possess'd of the most pleasurable part of a marry'd state, without being ty'd to any of its inconveniencies ; and he determined to indulge himself in it, at least for a little time, before he returned to the pursuit of his more sober schemes. The lady was vexed enough that she could not obtain him on her own terms ; but as she found that impracticable now, she fell into his own jovial way of reasoning, and determined to enjoy what she saw was the only price of her ruin, in all the extent it could be carry'd to.

Nothing could exceed the joy with which our gallant couple spent about a fortnight in this manner : at length, as is usually the case on these occasions, the lover grew pall'd and weary of the same round of delight over and over again : human nature began to work within him ; and tho' he was in no humour to discontinue his vicious course, he long'd for variety to give a new pleasure to it.

It was with a very heavy heart that the girl, who easily saw thro' his pretences, heard him say one evening, that he found it would be necessary for him to return to London the next morning : she told him with a flood of tears, that she saw his intent

tent as plainly as if he confess'd it to her, that she acknowledged she had deserved the ruin he had brought upon her ; “ But, Sir, “ continu'd she, I cannot believe that by “ my behaviour since I have deserved you “ should forsake me.”

Loveill was struck with the justice of what she said to him : he told her he had no intent of it ; nay, he even resolv'd against it ; but London was in his head, and no arguments could persuade him from going. He deliver'd the lady the next day to her mother ; and after silencing her reproaches for decoying away her innocent child, by recriminating her with her design against him, he took his leave giving the young lady a handsome present, and promis'd to obey the mother's injunction of never seeing her again.

It was evening before he left their house, and the Park being not far off, he stroll'd into the Mall to see what was going forward there ; and thence following the stream of the genteeler people, who seem'd most of them going one way, he soon found himself at Buckingham-gate ; where a coach offering itself before him, he stepp'd into it, order'd the fellow to follow the rest of the company, not doubting but they were going to some publick diversion or other ; and not caring three farthings

†

what

what it was, so long as he found it would draw a good many people together.

The few days that Mr. Loveill had spent in town before his Richmond expedition, might have let him into the knowledge of the diversions of the season ; but it had so happen'd, that tho' he had heard much of the charms of Vaux-hall, and even of Cuper's gardens and Marybon, the word Ranelagh had never reach'd his ears. The coach which he had got into now brought him thither ; and it is easy to conceive with what pleasure a man of his taste viewed the most magnificent room in the world, and heard one of the best bands of musick that was ever got together.

The train of coaches he had followed, gave him an expectation of a very numerous assembly, where-ever it was he was going ; but the scattered appearance that their company, and the people who had got in before, made in a place where there was room for so many, and where so glorious an entertainment was provided for them, gave him a very bad opinion of the taste of the publick in their amusements.

The musick were performing a favourite piece when he entered, and partly the attention with which he had listen'd to this, and partly the surprize he was in at the sight of a place of so much elegance, which  
he



he had not heard of, prevented for a good while his taking any notice of the straggling company. When he was at leisure to observe them, it was some satisfaction to him to see that what there were of them were of the best; and particularly to meet with several people of fashion with whom he had been intimate at Paris. He could not help unburthening his heart to the first party he join'd with, by telling them he was amazed to see so noble an entertainment as this place afforded so little frequented. The person to whom he had addressed himself was a Frenchman: he answered him in the spirit of the nation he belong'd to, that the English were the civilest people in the world to foreigners, and that he looked upon this place to be one of the greatest instances there had ever been of their politeness to them; as they had here been at an immense expence to prepare an entertainment, which tho' every foreigner proved by his continual presence at it, that he spoke truth when he declared it the grandest thing of the kind in Europe, it was evident themselves had no taste or relish for. A little conflict that had arisen in Loveill's breast on this declaration, between the love of truth, and the love of his country, had not given him opportunity to answer to it, when his  
thoughts

thoughts were called off from that and every other subject, by the charming Cynthia, who was brushing close by him.

The amazement Loveill was in at seeing an object so vastly superior to every thing he had met with since the affair of Lady Juliet, had fix'd him motionless in his place; and his company had no more miss'd his presence than he theirs, till in the course of their circuit round the room, they found him immoveable as a statue, in the spot where they had before been talking with him. He evaded the raillery they were going to exert upon the occasion, by complaining of a pain in his forehead, that had seiz'd him in an instant, and almost taken away his senses. He join'd in conversation with them for half an hour after this, that they might not suspect the true reason of his extasy; and at the end of that time made an excuse of listening more nearly to a song he was fond of, to slip away from them, and mix himself among the crowd about the orchestre.

It was with some difficulty that he had hitherto conceal'd his uneasiness at not having met the lady again, who had struck him in this manner. He had concluded she was gone, and was now wholly upon the search of somebody he knew, that he might enquire after her of, without giving  
his

## 236 The ADVENTURES of

his former company the suspicion they might have had of the cause of his head-ach, if he had asked any thing about a woman just then of any of them. He was casting his eye over the whole company with this intent, when, to his infinite transport, he saw the lady herself seated under the music directly before him.

Such charms as Cynthia's exerting themselves upon so precipitate a temper as Love-ill's, cou'd give no time for deliberation or contrivance. He heard her speak well of the song just performed to a lady who sat next her: he immediately join'd his opinion, and with an easy familiarity, which gave Cynthia, who was much us'd to the conversation of people of fashion, - a sort of conviction that he was of that rank, forc'd himself into her acquaintance. The notice she had taken of the song, threw him naturally upon expatiating on that theme. He said a great many things that would have made him dear to a Handel or Corelli on the occasion, but the coolness with which he at length saw they were received, by the lady he address'd them to, had like to have discouraged him from any farther attempts, till an accident recover'd his hopes again; her immoderate praise of a ballad about Anson and Warren, which had been sung every where  
a year

a year or two before, convincing him at length, to his great joy, that the lady had not had any distaste for him, but only that she had no taste at all for music.

The artful lover no sooner perceiv'd this, than he dropp'd the subject; and call'd up another, that gave him an opportunity of shining in what was more immediately his sphere of excellence, and which every woman is sure to be pleas'd with: this was love. The distance and modesty under which he had propos'd this subject, easily led the lady into it; and he engag'd her insensibly so far in the discourse, that she was induc'd to declare her own sentiments of that universal passion, which terminated in a very pathetic praise of that sort of love, which the ladies have honoured with the name of Platonic.

A man of Loveill's address could not have wish'd for a more favourable opportunity of pleading his own private cause with her, than this of doing it under the general doctrine of the two species of that passion, the one of which he was the advocate for, the other the lady. Cynthia was not displeas'd to find that her new lover took care to point every general assertion with a particular allusion to his own case. These, from the most distant and obscure in the world, grew by degrees extremely open  
and



and familiar, and the speaking glances he accompanied them with, convinced her that she had made no common conquest; but that she had engaged with a man, who wanted neither artifice nor confidence to push his pretensions.

Loveill was upon the point of convincing her, that the Platonic love she was so attach'd to the good opinion of, was but the shadow of the passion he pleaded in favour of, that it cou'd only please those who were too old, too ugly, or too cowardly to venture on the other; and that she had no more right to one of these pretensions against it than to the other, when he first perceived that there was a third person of their party, whom he had not done the honour of taking any notice of before.

This was a lady who sat close to the side of Cynthia; and who, when a multitude of expressive looks had been thrown away upon Loveill, who now for an hour had seen no eyes but those of Cynthia, had proceeded to pull that lady by the sleeve, and whisper something about *impertinence*, which she took care the gallant shou'd overhear.

She had no sooner caught his ear in this manner, than she turned the whole artillery of her frowns upon him; and declar'd her indignatory sense of the freedom of his conversation, by an affected twist of her

neck to one shoulder, attended with the most stately bridling of her head imaginable; immediately after which, she directed a side glance toward Cynthia, expressing all that honour and respect she ought to be treated with; and seconded it with a most menacing frown, that lowr'd destruction on him, for having dar'd to address her with such familiarity.

Loveill distinguished enough in this dumb language, to find that Cynthia was a woman of some quality; but provoked beyond measure at the insolence of a third person, in taking offence at what had pass'd with the lady herself, he, with an affected bow and sarcastic sneer, told the angry fair one, loud enough to be heard by every body, Madam, nature has made your face so sufficiently forbidding, that it is not necessary you should be at the pains of adding to her bounties. Cynthia look'd grave at this; and the lover added in the same breath, your Ladyship, I presume, will be convinced, by my taking this liberty with that gentlewoman, that I am sensible she has not the honour to be of your acquaintance. The conclusion of this speech was accompanied by a very respectful bow to Cynthia, with which the lover took his leave, in order to post himself where he might see, by what pass'd between them  
after

240      The ADVENTURES of

after his departure, what connection they had with one another, and what he was to judge of both of them by it.

Whatever Cynthia was, the lover was sure to be in the right. She was extremely handsome, and that alone was sufficient for him. If she prov'd a fit person for a wife, it was exactly what he wanted; if for a mistress, his late debauch had represented another Richmond scheme as the most agreeable thing in the world to him. He knew he should immediately distinguish, by the ensuing conversation between the ladies, even at that distance, which way his intrigue was likely to terminate; and placing himself behind a pillar of the octagon, he was all eye, all attention.

The first thing he perceived was, that Miss Sulky, (such was the name of the lady he had affronted,) was extremely angry with Cynthia, for receiving a stranger's addresses so freely, and that Cynthia was much more angry at her for interrupting them. A great deal of very familiar conversation he could observe pass'd between them after this, in which Miss Sulky sometimes took great airs upon her; and, as he could easily perceive by her frowns, and the undulatory toss of her head, pronounced the word *unsufferable*, with a very remarkable emphasis: and in answer to  
this

this he cou'd observe, by Cynthia's frequently drawing up herself into the attitude of a statue, and haughtily nodding her head in a slow and magisterial manner, that something was pronounced like *insolent!—and know your distance.*

It was impossible for Loveill to make out by all this, however much it favoured his passion, whether the censorious lady was a mere acquaintance, a sister, or a duenna to the beauty he had been talking to. He had however sufficiently inform'd himself of their sentiments on both sides, to know that Cynthia receiv'd his addresses very well, and that Miss Sulky was very heartily his enemy; and the only way to measure what proportion his fears on this side bore to his hopes on the other, was to determine what Miss Sulky was. In order to this, he fixed a stedfast and discerning eye upon that lady; and taking into consideration her dress, and her air, and manner, he easily determined, that he saw in her the double character of a waiting-gentlewoman, elevated into the rank of a companion; and that of an envious cast mistress, who, as she cou'd no longer taste the pleasures of an intrigue herself, died at the apprehension that any body else shou'd.

He was no sooner settled in the opinion of this lady's character and capacity, than



without employing his eyes in an affair, in which he knew they would be bribed against him, he turned upon his heel, to consider, from circumstances, what that lady should be, who was so extremely familiar with a person of her stamp.

A moment decided this: and such was the penetration of this masterly discerner of people's hearts, that he immediately after concluded, from what he had seen and heard between them, that he had told Cynthia a home truth, when he assured her in banter of her Platonic scheme, that no woman of sense and spirit could favour it, unless she had philosophized herself into it, on finding that it was all she had to expect, as her own portion; and in fine, that she was not only a mistress, but was the mistress of some old or impotent rascal, who had retain'd the other fair one, under the name of a companion to her, to be the spy and guard upon a charming creature, whom his own unworthiness of, rendered him in eternal fears of losing.

Every thing that Loveill observ'd after this, confirmed the opinion he had established within himself of his new acquaintance. A woman of Cynthia's figure and deportment might have commanded the acquaintance and respect of every body; but he found she walked in the midst of a polite com-

company as in a desert ; and he easily concluded, that no woman spoke to her because of her character, and no man, because of the strict guard she was kept under. It was easy for him to see now, that he had taken a very rash step, in affronting the watchful companion of the lady he was pursuing. He saw at once that she wou'd be able, by telling the story her own way, either to have the lady lock'd up for a twelvemonth, or at least to render him so suspected, that no art cou'd ever bring him into her company again.

He immediately determined, that the making up his quarrel with the duenna, was the only means of his having any farther hopes of the lady. He instantly joined them a second time, talk'd of indifferent things, drew the duenna into a conversation, whether she wou'd or no, and soon found, that an ambition for the character of a wit was the second passion in her soul. He had long before perceived, that the malicious part of her character proceeded principally from her own disappointments ; and he comforted himself on these discoveries, as allowing him basis enough to work upon, for the raising even of a much more complex structure, if he pleas'd, than he had at present any thoughts of.

## 244 The ADVENTURES of

The whole scheme lay before him: he found, that all that was necessary to render his affair easy with Cynthia was, to make a false attack upon her guard; and by that means at once to secure an intimacy in the family; and to render his visits, however frequent, incapable of being the subject of suspicion.

Loveill began his courtship to this gentlewoman, by saying something that drew her into a witticism in reply; then extolling that to the skies, and telling her, that if she had attack'd him with her wit, instead of her frowns, he should not before have expos'd himself so far as he had done, by affronting the only person in the world that he had found truly worthy of admiration. Miss Sulky did not want sense on another occasion, but every woman's ear is open to flattery, and the best qualities in the world in that sex may be destroyed by it. She grew sensible that the man was in love with her; she admir'd him in her turn, for having sense enough to see those charms in her, which a foolish and blind world had overlooked; and believed him to be the sincerest man in the world, when he told her, that pertness and wit were the same thing, that a modest assurance was the only means that cou'd render a woman truly agreeable, and that faces of an ell  
long

long were the handsomest things in the creation.

Cynthia, who did not want discernment, immediately saw thro' the use her new lover made of this stalking-horse in his approaches to her, and favour'd it in every thing. She had even confidence enough in her own charms, and in her lover's sense of them, to pretend weariness as an excuse for sitting down, in order to give them an opportunity of taking a turn round the room together; and on her joining them again, she found they were come to so good an understanding, that the lady was only sorry she had not an opportunity of displaying all her qualifications to her imagined lover; and particularly, that she cou'd not make him understand, that however contemptible Cynthia's taste in music might be, she was not only an admirer, but a performer; and that her voice had as much music as wit in it.

Cynthia with great good-nature took the hint; and as Mr. Beard had just received the applause of Mr. Loveill, for singing *With horns and with bounds*, from Dryden's secular ode, she told him, that there was one in company, whom, if he should ever be so happy to hear perform that song, he wou'd not afterwards be so ready to applaud any body else in it.



## 246 The ADVENTURES of

The lover took the hint : he entreated the lady that he might have yet more occasion of calling her the most accomplish'd woman in the world : and the happy duenna, impatient of losing a moment in advancing her cause, led them out into the garden ; and there, under the shelter of a dark walk, deafened the owls that shrieked out in vain their weaker screams in opposition and in answer to her, and occasioned a scene which, had Strada heard, we had never been teas'd with the trifling story of the Nightingale and Lutanist.

The singer was too full of her own applause, to attend to any thing else, while this high scene was transacting ; and the lover, who had been in some pain for fear of being misunderstood by Cynthia, under covert of this, and of the shade the trees favour'd him with, ventured to seize her hand, and pressing it to his lips, us'd all the silent eloquence of a long lasting kiss, to tell her how much he ador'd her, and how much he dreaded her mistaking him, in his attempt to favour a passion that appear'd at present so hopeless.

Cynthia suffer'd all his rhetoric of this kind as long as he chose to continue it ; then pressing her hand closely to his lips again, plainly enough told him she saw it, and was happy in it. She concluded the  
silent

silent intercourse with two or three tender  
 pats, from the softest hand in the world,  
 against those lips, which had made them-  
 selves so well acquainted with it ; and  
 which seem'd to tell him, he was a wicked  
*rogue, and that she had seen well enough*  
*what he was about, from the first moment*  
*he engaged in it.*

This silent declaration of Cynthia's, and  
 the song of her duenna, terminated toge-  
 ther ; and the enraptured Loveill never was  
 more in earnest in his life, than when he  
 declar'd, in the utmost extasy, that nothing  
 in his whole life had ever given him an  
 equal pleasure.

The time of going out of the gardens  
 now drew on : the clocks had struck ten ;  
 and on the return of our party into the  
 room, they found that the greatest part of  
 the company had left it. Loveill could not  
 find in his heart to complain of the use he  
 had made of about two hours and a half,  
 in thus attacking the finest woman of the  
 place ; quarrelling with another ; making  
 up the quarrel ; carrying on a mimic court-  
 ship, and a real one, at the same time ;  
 and establishing himself as well as a man  
 cou'd wish to be, in acquaintance that was  
 likely to prove so very agreeable to him.  
 Though he was contented however with  
 the use he had made of his time, he cou'd

not help lamenting that it was over. He uttered so many signs of discontent about it, as they went toward the house, that the enamoured duenna, who had no more mind to part than he had, after a short whisper with Cynthia, told him, that if he had no equipage of his own there, she had begg'd the favour of that lady to set him down in London.

Loveill had scarce time to thank the ladies for their civilities, before he was arrived with them at the door, where he was a little startled to see a very fashionable landau waiting for them, with three footmen in lac'd liveries attending, and with a cypher instead of arms upon the door. He handed them in, and giving the servant who held the door a guinea, begging him to pay his coachman out of it, he stepped in after them, and spent an hour of moonlight very happily as they went home, in much silent love to Cynthia, and much open admiration of the other lady; whom they engaged to sing all the way, that if a dark corner gave opportunity of a civility to the hand, the tell-tale smack of lips, too much in earnest to be cautious, might not discover it.

When the coach was arriv'd in town, Cynthia very complaisantly ask'd the lover where she should set him down. Loveill

was

was silent some time; at length he confessed to her, that it was the most perplexing question he had ever had put to him. You are sensible ladies, continu'd he, how little inclination I have to leave one of you, and how much I am in the dark as to every circumstance that should instruct me what to answer you.—I can only say, don't let me sacrifice a future happiness by an unguarded use of this—Set me down when your own prudence will not let you carry me any farther. Cynthia press'd his hand with great tenderness on this, and was not able to make him any other answer; but the duenna exalted beyond bounds at the declaration her lover, as she imagined it, had made to her, thrust her head with great vehemence out of the coach, and order'd John to go home. Loveill found by a gentle touch of Cynthia's finger that she was not displeas'd with this; and as he soon found he might trust her prudence, was very easy about going with them, tho' he did not well know how he should excuse himself to somebody he might happen to find there.

The coach stopp'd at a very good house in a very good street: the lover alighting; handed the ladies in; and, as they did not forbid it, followed them. He was conducted into a very elegant apartment, where



he for the first time tasted the ambrosial dew on Cynthia's lips, under the civility of telling the ladies he was very glad to see them safe at home. The lady made an apology about the entertainment they should be able to give him, by telling him, that Mr. *Nothing* (such was the unlucky name of the master of the house) being no supper-man, had used them to neglect that meal so far, that she was afraid they should be able to give him but a very bad proof how glad they should be hereafter to see him. Miss Sulky terrify'd, lest the bashful gentleman should take this as a civil way of bidding him go about his business, got up with a great deal of eagerness, and seizing Loveill's hat and cane, told him, look ye, Sir, you are my prisoner for these two hours: if you could not be pleas'd with a bad supper in good company, you are not the man I take you for; but however there are fishmongers and poulterers near enough, and 'tis her own fault if she does not give you a good one.

Loveill gallantly told the lady with a languishing air, that his fetters would be of a much longer duration than she was at present pleas'd to date them at; and after a profusion of compliments upon her lips, her eyes, her wit, and every thing that  
he

he found she thought agreeable about her. He gave her an opportunity, by walking up to the window, of slipping out of the room to give orders for his better entertainment.

The door was no sooner shut after her, than Loveill catching Cynthia in his arms, told her, she must pardon every thing in a man distracted as he was for her, and allow'd so few moments for telling her so. There is nothing in nature that encourages freedom like restraint: the strict eye Cynthia's duenna had over almost all her moments, made her indulge the few that were left to her: she suffered liberties in a lover of four hours acquaintance, that she would have refused after as many months in the common forms; and the softest scene imaginable was much too soon interrupted by the sudden return of Miss Sulky, who tho' she was very desirous of shewing her taste in entertaining her lover, did not chuse to lose much of his company about it.

Loveill is a gentleman very quick in all his motions: the opening of the door was the only signal he had of the duenna's approaching; and yet at her entry he was in a distant corner of the room from that where Cynthia sat, admiring the colouring of a fine china vase, which he had remov'd

mov'd in his way from the cabinet it had stood on. The duenna had too good an opinion of herself to be capable of jealousy; yet she was not without her terrors when she remembered, that within a few hours her lover had paid his addressee to her rival; and was not a little pleas'd to find his indifference so soon arriv'd at the pitch she thought she now saw it at.

Nothing surpriz'd Loveill so much as that this Mr. *Nothing*, whose name he had heard at his first coming in, did not appear all this while. He did not venture however to ask any questions about him, till on the servants laying only three knives at table, he called up his courage, and enquired of the duenna, whether there was not to be another of the company? The girl who saw the confusion and uneasiness with which he ask'd this question, deliver'd the monosyllable *No!* with which she answered it, with such a particular spirit, that the lover catching her by the hand said, dearest creature, let me kiss you to death for telling me so; and attack'd her with a fervour, which he was not sorry to find interrupted by the sound of a footman's feet coming up stairs.

Supper was served with an elegance that was of a piece with every thing else he had seen there; and the party was so happy on  
all

all sides, that they had certainly not broke up till day-light, if the watchman had not at length advertis'd them that it was past three o'clock. The lover took his leave, and and the ladies were too sensible of their power over him, to think there was any occasion to ask him when he would come again.

## C H A P. XXI.

*The history of Mrs. Nothing, as delivered from her most intimate friend.*

LOVEILL was scarce less pleas'd with the address and management of this prosperous amour, than with the success of it. A thousand agreeable reveries kept him waking till it was time to make the ladies a second visit. He dressed in all the splendor he could, and by twelve o'clock was got into a chair, and in a few minutes more was at the house where he had spent the former evening with so much pleasure. He had the caution to order the chairmen to ask if Miss Sulky, not if Cynthia was at home; and very happy it was for him that he did so. The lady concerned was within hearing: she had been up and ready to receive him an hour, and began by this time to complain of his indifference. Great part of the night had  
been



been spent in a conversation between the two ladies, who were bedfellows, of which Mr. Loveill had been the subject; and tho' Miss Sulky had been blind to every thing but his passionate address to her while he was with them, his absence had given her an opportunity of scanning over his conduct more strictly, and jealousy had let her into the secret of many of his hints and double-entendres. In fine, the dispute toward morning had run so high, (tho' Cynthia, who knew she was sure enough of her conquest,) gave up every thing, that the duenna had rested the decision upon this test, which of them he would ask for when he made his next visit.

She was full of rapture at the sight of her lover, and infinitely more so at the decision of the cause in her favour: she no sooner heard her own name, than she threw open the door of the room where she was, call'd Loveill in with a transport that could not hide itself from the footmen and chairmen; and received him with open arms, telling him, Sir, I shall not explain myself to you at present, but you have made me the happiest woman in the world this morning: sit down, and let us enjoy the moment that offers itself, without the impertinence of a third person, who will pre-

sently be a spy, not only on our actions, but on our very looks.

Loveill, who till this moment pretended that he did not recollect there was such a person as Cynthia in the world, now coolly asked after her, declaring, that if Miss Sulky had not been present, he should have thought her a very agreeable woman; and spoke with a pretended unconcern that perfectly convinc'd his companion that he did not care three farthings about her, but merely ask'd after her by way of conversation; he led the fool'd duenna into employing those minutes she had insisted on it that Cynthia should give her to herself with him, not in the tender intercourse she had destin'd them to before-hand, but in giving him, what of all things in the world he wanted to know, this Cynthia's history.

The lady whom you saw me with last night, Sir, said she, is perhaps one of the most remarkable women in the world. I ought to begin the telling you who she is, by giving you her name; but she has had so many and so little right to any one of them, that I don't know by which I ought to call her to you at present. Her acquaintance at this house is but of a moderate standing, and her trades-people have not yet taught themselves to call her by the name of the master of it, but too frequently blunder

blunder into affronting her by the use of that of the last person she liv'd with.

At home, we of her most intimate acquaintance calls her *Cynthia*, a nick-name which was given her by her first lover, an Oxford scholar, I wont say how many years ago, but it is not greatly less than twenty, and which is the only one that has stuck by her ever since: in company we are desired to call her Mrs. Nothing, an infinite pains is taken to make the world believe she is so.

Mr. Nothing has himself given greatly into it: you might observe instances of it on the plate last night, and on the coach-door; he is as fond of honours as most people are who don't deserve them; yet you see, rather than declare to the world that Cynthia's arms (if she knows what they are) have no right to stand among his, he has taken out his own, and only retain'd a cypher in their place. He has invented a nick-name, by which he always calls her in company, that does not either express any connexion, or the want of any between them; and he permits her to invite every body she knows to dine with her, (I need not tell you, Sir, how gloriously our table is fill'd sometimes on this occasion) where the servants are to call her their lady, and she has leave to give a thousand

and hints of being his wife, without being contradicted.

Loveill, who knew very well what allowances he was to make for the malice of a rival of miss Sulky's temper, and how far he ought to believe her, was not a little pleased to find a woman he was become so violently attached to, so proper for his purpose, and in so prosperous a situation: it was plain from her dress and attendance, and from every thing he now saw about him, that she was kept at this time by a man of some consequence; that he allowed her sufficient liberties, which she did not seem afraid to make use of; and that he either was not jealous of her, or was afraid to own that he was so. It was much the same thing to Loveill, which of these was the case; he foresaw plainly enough, that with good management he should have an amour of the most pleasureable sort in the world, with a fine woman in perfect security, and at the expence of another. He could not hide the pleasure he felt in the idea, from betraying itself in his face; but the self-satisfied Duenna luckily understanding it only as an approbation of what she had been relating, thus continued her story.

The lady we are speaking of, was debauched from her father's house, (where  
that



that house was, or who was the owner of it, I am afraid it would not be easy to determine; but remember, Sir, you are to be a hearer, and not to ask impertinent questions) by the lover I just now mentioned to you; as herself tells the story at eleven years old. The title of an Oxford scholar sounds great, I ought to explain myself upon it: Mr. Scrape, (that was the name of the youth to whom I have given it,) was one of those gentlemen who pick up scraps of meat and erudition there, by calling up the drowsy students in a morning, and cleaning their shoes, and their trenchers. However much this youth had profited of the learning of his masters, he had not failed to pick up a relish for all their vices. He gam'd, drank, whor'd, swore, ly'd, cheated, and in short, was a master of all the accomplishments of a modern fine gentleman: he unluckily found his finances too slender to bear him out in the way of life he was ambitious of getting into; and one morning, when he knew his principal patron was safe with an over-night's debauch, he made free with the locks of his door, and of his beureau; and walked off with his watch, money, and whatever he could find valuable about him.

London

London was the destined scene where he was to make a figure ; but as he knew a beau without a mistress would be a solecism in nature, he called upon the lady you will see by-and-by in his way : he shewed her his riches, and made her the partner of his flight. They were got as far as Wickham in the way to their destined place of residence, when as they were solacing themselves together in a hedge ale-house at the skirts of the place, by great good fortune, not having ventured into a good inn, they heard the bell of the town-cryer, who after a long Oyes, described the youth who had robb'd a gentleman of Oxford, and who was supposed somewhere on the London road, with a reward of twenty pound for taking him.

Our young gentleman's curiosity had led him to the door to hear what was the matter ; but he heard his own person and dress so well pictur'd, that he thought it very proper to skulk in again ; and as there was no body but the good woman of the house within, and she was half deaf, he found it no difficult matter to conceal himself there till it was dark ; when acquainting his mistress with the whole circumstances of his fortune, he told her, there was nothing for it but the escaping under covert of the night, and getting into some bye-road to  
Epsom,

Epſom, the only place of gallantry at that time of the year that was worth his notice, ſince London was by this accident forbidden him.

The journey was prosperous, though uncomfortable: the youth bought other cloaths at the firſt place where any were to be had, and after that travell'd in open day-light, till he arriv'd at the intended ſcene of delight. It was no difficult thing for him there to change the country habit he had equipp'd himſelf in, for a more genteel one. He lived in great happineſs a week, employing moſt of his time, except the hours of gaming, in his lodging with his dear Cynthia, and often bringing home loads of treaſure from the tables.

Our little lady who knew the viciffitudes of a life of this kind, had not let ſo much gold go thro' her hands without making ſome of it ſtick to her fingers; and in conſequence of this precaution ſhe was worth three and twenty guineas, when enquiring in great perplexity one day after the reaſon of her lover's not coming home at his uſual hour, ſhe had the mortification to hear that a young gentleman from Oxford, who had loſt his money to him at the table, was in ſo ill a humour in the paying it, that obſerving him ſteadfaſtly, he had diſcovered a face he very well knew

knew thro' the disguise of a powder'd perriwig, and had occasioned his being pick'd up by a constable; the unlucky consequence of which you are to know, Sir, was his being hang'd at the next sessions.

Our distressed heroine saw him no more after the news of his misfortune. She looked upon herself as a rich woman with the money she had made out of him, but dreading that if she should be discovered, it would be taken from her again, she quitted her lodgings without ceremony, and took the same road by which she had come; intending to get back as fast as possible to her father's.

You'll laugh, Sir, to think of the difference between Cynthia travelling on foot, up to the knees in dirt in the dark, and Cynthia lolling in her coach with three flambeaus behind it: but the worst is to come. Tho' she had got rid of her lover, she had not got rid of his remembrance: the fatigue of travelling in this tiresome way had encreased a complaint, which the rascal who gave it her, had told her was common to all new marry'd people, to so violent a degree, that she was oblig'd to disclose it to the good woman of the inn where she next lodged; and in consequence of her advice, she employed a journey-

man



man apothecary in the town to relieve her ; and determined to stay there till she was well.

This fellow, who knew about as much of physick as his patient, grew extremely enamoured of her person, and the pride of having so charming a creature lock'd up from all the world but himself, and his eagerness after so new a thing as a mistress, made him more the lover than the doctor ; in short, tho' he did all the little he was able, he was not able to persuade himself to stay for the effects of it, but paid his addresses to her in so successful a manner, that he was soon in as bad a condition as herself.

They were in almost as miserable a way as people could be in, when the new lover's master discovered his condition, and extorting the truth from him by promises, and by threats, was at length led to the lady. This good old gentleman had a little more skill, and a great deal more honesty than his journeyman. He was struck with compassion, on seeing so young a creature in so miserable a condition. He enquired into her finances, and finding she had enough left to pay for her support for a necessary time, he generously engaged to cure her gratis.

This honest man performed every thing he had engaged in, and the people of the house,

house, with whom the poor creature had by that time she was cur'd spent all her money, mov'd by a lamentable story she had laid together, of her being forced from her father's door by three ruffians, who had carried her a-cross the country, tied her hands, and used her in a barbarous manner; wrote to her father, and met with no contradiction to the story: his answer only imported, that she went away from him he knew not how, and that he never desired to see her again. The people thought her case truly pitiable, and determined to keep her in their own house, till they could bring her surly and unnatural parent into a humour to receive her.

Many letters were written in consequence of this resolution, but the old fellow, who seemed to know his daughter's disposition as well as if he had been acquainted with her till this time, treated them with the utmost contempt, and never returned any answer to the greatest part of them.

The people, tho' good-natur'd enough, grew tired of maintaining the unfortunate girl in idleness, with so little prospect of any advantage from it; and in fine, after about two months of this sort of life, miss (I would tell you her original name if I knew it) offered herself as a servant to them, and had the honourable post of  
sweeping,

## 264 The ADVENTURES of

sweeping rooms, and making beds, assigned to her.

A pretty fac'd wench, in such an employment as this at a publick inn, could not miss of many opportunities of profiting by her beauty. She seldom lay alone, and by great management, she contriv'd during a three years course of this life, to preserve her constitution, tho' at the expence of the loss of many a handsome offer; and notwithstanding these disadvantages, to make up a fortune four times as great as that her first gallant had left her possess'd of.

Tir'd of this state of dependance, she was determin'd to find some way of setting out for herself: she sung prettily, her figure was excellent, and she had a smartness in her manner, that pleas'd every body she conversed with. She had long been consulting what road of life these qualifications would be most likely to make a figure in; when luckily for her, an accident determin'd what she would have perhaps else spent her life in deliberating about.

A company of strolling players arriv'd with all their baggage at the inn, where the lady at this time liv'd, and declared in the kitchen their intention of entertaining the town with some plays. It was market-day when they came in, and the news was immediately spread all over the

country, by the people who had with great joy heard it at the house. The master of the company propos'd to exhibit for the first time on the market day following; and the fair maid of the inn, enamour'd of a way of life in which she should be half her time a queen or princess, offer'd her service to join them. The master of the company, who according to custom, time immemorial, has the whole band of actresses for his seraglio, was charm'd with the prospect of so agreeable an addition to his number; and when on farther discourse, he found that she was worth near a hundred pounds, he very good-natur'dly let her into a large property in the stock for that sum, gave her no less than five shares of the profits of every night, and did her the honour to declare her the favourite sultana, and take her to his bed from that time.

The news of a company of players in a place, where in the memory of man none had ever been before; the advantage of their playing on a market day, when all the country round had sent them an audience; and the fame of the fair maid of the inn, who had engaged to act a principal part the first night with them, got together such an audience, that the barn they had pitched upon was not big enough



## 266 The ADVENTURES of

to hold them ; but a legion of bumpkins paid their three pences, for standing round about the outside of it to hear something. The play pass'd off with the most extravagant applause, being beyond all doubt the very finest performance the people who were present had ever seen of the kind: our new heroine acted to a miracle; and the company of players, who never had seen such a night before, got so drunk for joy, that they were not able to prepare for another representation till that day se'n-night.

The profits of the night were fairly distributed among the actors; and if every private member of the company had enough from it to get drunk upon for a week, you may guess what our heroine's five shares amounted to. Her lover told her this was their common course of life; that they got money like dirt; and were happier people than the kings and princesses they represented. He assisted her in computing what would be the produce of the money she had deposited, annually, at the rate of thus much a night, for he told her hereafter they should play every day; and he soon convinced her that a hundred and fifty per cent. was the least advantage she could possibly make of it.

This

This glorious scene lasted a whole week : on the next market day they play'd again with the same success as at first ; but the town's-people being now alarm'd at the strollers getting so much of their money to carry out of the country, complained to a neighbouring justice, who the next morning had them all disturb'd out of their sleep very early, and committed them without mercy to the house of correction, as vagabonds and sturdy beggars.

This was a lamentable scene to our young heroine: she had gone to bed a princess, and it was a dreadful fall indeed to wake to beat hemp. The master of the prison, had taken notice of her a long time at the inn as a pretty girl ; and tho' he had hitherto lick'd his lips in vain at her, he now demanded the perquisite of his place, giving her the alternative of immediate compliance, or a cat-of-nine-tails to be laid over her delicate shoulders at his sole pleasure.

There was no room for choice in this deplorable case: the lady consented ; and as we seldom see the event of our actions, her concession was attended with a happy consequence to the whole body she belong'd to, worthy the being purchas'd at a greater price. She had found the art of pleasing on these good-natur'd occasions so well,

that she softened the tyger-heart of the keeper, and he let her into the secrets of the state, remitting the stripes that were order'd the company severally for five pieces, and for five more which he faithfully delivered to the justice, procuring their discharge on condition of their immediately quitting the country.

This whole business was transacted in about two hours; and the lady after thanking and taking leave of her goaler in the tenderest manner, returned to the company, and told them she had procured them their liberty. They all readily agreed to pay their share in the expence of it, the lady was reimburs'd the whole money it had cost her, and received the thanks of the body in all the solemnity of a Roman triumph.

Cynthia was now enter'd into a life which she little suspected the true nature of: the adventure of the house of correction determin'd the company not only to pack up their matters and be gone, but to travel also so far as that the very news of this disaster might be lost before they presum'd to play again, lest it should make a precedent against them.

The success of their future performances were in no sort like the taste the two first had given our lady of them; in short, she

ſhe had wandered with theſe vagabonds no leſs than ſix years, half naked, half ſtarv'd, kick'd and abus'd by her theatrical gallant, and was grown the verieſt bunter (pardon me the uſe of ſo coarſe a word, ſince there is no other that can expreſs it) that ever draggled her ragged petticoats thro' the mud in following a company; when after all this abſence the news of the death of the cruel magiſtrate who had confined them, and the remembrance of the ſucceſs they had met with in the town where they had firſt ſeen her, carry'd them thither again.

The whole country kept up a remembrance of the joy they had received from the ſtrollers, and of the great figure the poor wench of the inn had made among them; they apply'd for leave of the principal people of the town to act only once, and they obtain'd it. The houſe was crowded in ſuch a manner as they had never ſeen one ſince their being here before; and the play, which was nothing leſs than Tamerlane, went on extremely well till a miller of the neighbourhood falling in love with our heroine, who perform'd the part of Arpaſia in it, carry'd off that princeſs in the third act, and the company, who had no body prepar'd to ſupply her place, to the great entertainment



of their polite audience, were obliged to give them the two last acts of the *Stragem*.

The company by degrees dwindled in reputation after the loss of their principal actress, and finally left the town without paying their landlord.

It far'd much otherwise with the lady whom they had been robb'd of. She was sensible enough of the miseries of the way of life she was just relieved from, to make her extremely cautious in her conduct that she might keep in the happier state she had now got into: the miller doated on his buxom lass, and she exerted every artifice that a long habitude of licentiousness had instructed her to please by, to retain him in her service. He dressed her well, but plainly; she had her horse to take the air upon, plenty crown'd her table, and peace her bed; and, in fine, the miller to escape the censure of the parson of a neighbouring parish, who had been scandalized at his open defiance of his admonitions, and had threaten'd to present him as an ill liver, swallowed a serious lye, and gave it out to all the world that she was his wife.

Cynthia's duffy lover was a hale handsome fellow, of a chearful temper, free from suspicion, extremely loving in his nature,

nature, and he thought nothing that he could do was enough to return for the happiness his doxy gave him.

The lady lived almost as many years with him as she had done with the strollers, and would probably have been with him still, had not fortune at this period carry'd down that most egregious dupe *lord Blanket* to the place. Somebody had us'd this errant nobleman in an election-affair, and he was taking his rounds in the country where his interest lay, when he turn'd out of the road to our miller's hut to demand his vote and interest for his friend.

The person who open'd the door to this spangled trifle, was our Cynthia. The peer was struck with her rosy bloom, and, as he understood it, country innocence: he enquired about her, and no sooner heard that she was the miller's handsome wife, for so she was by this time called throughout the whole country, than he determin'd to immortalize his reputation by running away with her.

He divulg'd his mind to the ghostly confessor, who usually attended him on these expeditions, and implor'd the assistance of that reverend buffoon to contrive the means of carrying her off: what his lordship's brain would not have made out in a year, this practis'd pandar contriv'd

in an instant ; he sent for the miller to their inn, made him dine with him ; and, in fine, kept him there drunk till his noble patron had carry'd off the lady in his coach in triumph.

Here began a new scene of life with lady Cynthia ; a name she at her arrival in town assumed, and the former half of which she has retain'd ever since, tho' the adjunct has sometimes been alter'd. She has often indeed confess'd in confidence to me, that she never tasted such true content as with the miller ; but splendor will always dazzle female eyes : the name of mistress to a lord was infinitely higher to her than that of wife to a country fellow ; and the pomp of dress, equipage, and attendance, banish'd the remembrance of every other more solid pleasure.

I need not tell a man of your knowledge of the world, that when lord Blanket kept a mistress it was for the publick good : every male creature of his acquaintance liked his country lass, and every one that liked her had her. A man of his estate and understanding will always be surrounded by sycophants and parasites ; he was told that she was false to him by several of these, in revenge for her having held them a step too low for her favours : he charg'd her with her infidelity ten times a-day ;

a-day ; she deny'd it as often, and he as often believ'd her, and begg'd her pardon on his knees.

This dainty sort of life had continu'd a long time, when one day an accident defeated all her rhetorick : there was no outlying ocular demonstration ; and her lord was so heinously provoked at the proof he had of her perfidy, that he turn'd her off upon the hands of a dirty fellow whom he employ'd in collecting his rents, and who was the gentleman he had discover'd her with.

Here was a dreadful fall indeed ! At once she sunk from your ladyship, dress, equipage, and magnificence, to a hackney-coach, a dirty lodging, and Mrs. *Pinch*.

Fortune however had taken it into her head to favour her, and she did not chuse to give her up thus : it happened that this individual Mr. *Pinch* had also the management of the accounts of our *Mr. Nothing*, a man, who to give you his character in a very few words, would be lord Blanket himself, if he were not considerably worse. This rich, doating, and (but that must be a secret) impotent fellow, saw her one day at *Pinch's* : 'twas not by accident that he saw her, she was appriz'd of his coming, and dress'd herself to the utmost advantage to receive him. She no sooner enter'd the



in an instant ; he sent for the miller to their inn, made him dine with him ; and, in fine, kept him there drunk till his noble patron had carry'd off the lady in his coach in triumph.

Here began a new scene of life with lady Cynthia ; a name she at her arrival in town assumed, and the former half of which she has retain'd ever since, tho' the adjunct has sometimes been alter'd. She has often indeed confess'd in confidence to me, that she never tasted such true content as with the miller ; but splendor will always dazzle female eyes : the name of mistress to a lord was infinitely higher to her than that of wife to a country fellow ; and the pomp of dress, equipage, and attendance, banish'd the remembrance of every other more solid pleasure.

I need not tell a man of your knowledge of the world, that when lord Blanket kept a mistress it was for the publick good : every male creature of his acquaintance liked his country lass, and every one that liked her had her. A man of his estate and understanding will always be surrounded by sycophants and parasites ; he was told that she was false to him by several of these, in revenge for her having held them a step too low for her favours : he charg'd her with her infidelity ten times a-day ;

a-day ; she deny'd it as often, and he as often believ'd her, and begg'd her pardon on his knees.

This dainty sort of life had continu'd a long time, when one day an accident defeated all her rhetorick : there was no out-lying ocular demonstration ; and her lord was so heinously provoked at the proof he had of her perfidy, that he turn'd her off upon the hands of a dirty fellow whom he employ'd in collecting his rents, and who was the gentleman he had discover'd her with.

Here was a dreadful fall indeed ! At once she sunk from your ladyship, dress, equipage, and magnificence, to a hackney-coach, a dirty lodging, and Mrs. *Pinch*.

Fortune however had taken it into her head to favour her, and she did not chuse to give her up thus : it happened that this individual Mr. *Pinch* had also the management of the accounts of our *Mr. Nothing*, a man, who to give you his character in a very few words, would be lord Blanket himself, if he were not considerably worse. This rich, doating, and (but that must be a secret) impotent fellow, saw her one day at *Pinch's* : 'twas not by accident that he saw her, she was appriz'd of his coming, and dress'd herself to the utmost advantage to receive him. She no sooner enter'd the

room than he became enamour'd of her : in fine, he bought her of Pinch, and brought her hither, gave her his family-jewels, furnished her with a dress and equipage that puts virtue out of countenance ; and, in fine, made her the fine lady that you see now coming up to us, to give you the remainder of her own history.

## C H A P. XXII.

*Mr. Nothing is informed of Loveill's visits in his family.—He makes him a very handsome offer.—Cynthia's attachment to him is discovered by Miss Sulky.*

**T**HE last sentence Miss Sulky delivered, was addressed to Loveill's ear in a whisper, and accompanied with a sort of smile intended to take off all suspicion, in the very instant that Cynthia in an elegant undress enter'd the room.

Loveill saw her infinitely handsomer than his most favourable remembrance had represented her to him. He saw through the malice and jealousy that had inspired the subtle history he had just been entertained with, and he perswaded himself that

that he read the falsity of it in every look she gave him.

Cynthia rallied them on the subject of their three hours courtship. The lady blush'd assent to what she accused her of; and Loveill very gallantly told her, that he hardly thank'd her for interrupting it. From this instant it became a confessed thing, that Loveill courted Miss Sulky; and the credit of so new a thing as an honourable amour, made that lady overlook a great many things that she saw between that gentleman and Cynthia, which had else very soon blown up his acquaintance there.

*Mr. Nothing*, who was a west-country merchant, and who was then engaged in that part of the kingdom, purchasing tools to be us'd in London, was informed by letter of the offer that his lady's duenna had. She pressed him, in reward for her long and faithful services, now to do something for her, and make her a fortune that a gentleman might take up with. The sober *Mr. Nothing* took three posts to consider upon it; and then addressing his letter not to the lady, but to *Mr. Loveill*, to be left at his own house in town, he told him in it that he was very much obliged to him for the honour he intended his family; and that he should at present give him two thousand pounds with the lady,

+

and



and consider him in a very different manner in his will.

The lover made no secret of the letter he had been honoured with. He told the lady, that what Mr. Nothing had generously offer'd him, was two thousand times as much as he ever had desir'd with a woman of her accomplishments; but that at present his affairs wou'd by no means permit him to marry; though every day might bring him news that might make it easy to him.

Loveill, by this evasion, sav'd himself from the necessity of making a promise, which he knew he should have no great inclination to keep, if he had made it: the duenna was a good deal nettled at so unexpected and so indeterminate a delay, in a business which her heart was in a very particular manner set upon; but she found there was no getting over it: and as Mr. Loveill was a bait she cou'd not perswade herself to think of parting with, she acquiesced in the purchasing him on any terms, and waited the happy day with a very christian, that is, with a very forced patience.

Loveill, in the mean time, was in as prosperous a way as a man could wish. He had secur'd free access to Cynthia as often as he pleas'd; and by the concurrence of  
the

the distant master of the house, he had gained time and opportunity, the two great articles which are all that a lover wants, who truly knows what it is that he wants. Loveill made himself useful to the ladies, by being the idlest fellow in the world, and perfectly at their service on all occasions. They were at every public place together, in the most public manner. Every auction-room saw them in the morning, and every concert, or the gardens, in the evening. It is for vulgar souls to content themselves with seeing one diversion at a time. There were now three places of repute open for every evening's entertainment; and our gay party never miss'd seeing them all. Loveill always breakfasted with the ladies, and after the morning's tour took his leave of them to dress, that he might not be dirty at dinner with them: the coach was constantly ordered at six: they drank coffee immediately after dinner at Marybon, took half a dozen turns round the garden, scandalized every body either of them knew there, and then got into the coach, and were at Ranelagh by the beginning of the third act. They drank tea there, and heard the end of the performance; and thence adjourn'd by water to Vaux-hall, where chickens and champaign fill'd up the hours till two, or sometimes four in the

morning. By this scheme they saw every body at every public place every day ; and this without the misery of attending to bad musick ; for they always went to Marybon before the entertainment began, and to Vaux-hall after it was over.

This gallant town afforded many men who would have been very well contented to have been in Loveill's case ; not a few indeed who had attempted it in vain. The lady's nicety and pride, in her new preferment, had made her inaccessible to most of them ; the severity of her duenna to all. No man had ever thought of making a false attack upon that lady, till Loveill luckily hit upon it ; and till that, no body had found the only part on which Cynthia was accessible. Twenty people, who had us'd all their efforts in vain, daily watch'd the motions of our prosperous lover ; and one of them, from a series of these observations, made a bold push for the supplanting him. He wrote to Mr. Nothing in the country, told him how scandalously he was abus'd in the face of the whole world : that his mistress had a gallant, who was never out of her sight ; who breakfasted with her, and supp'd with her ; and who even made no secret in the world of their intrigue, but was every day seen

seen in public with her, in the coach with her ; and in short every where with her.

The good old gentleman, perfectly satisfied with the marriage-scheme that he had so seriously engag'd himself in, laughed at the notice ; and did not condescend to send any answer, either to this, or to any of the several other letters he had been pestered with on the same occasion. But though the lovers escaped this home attack, they were in a few days after very near being sacrificed by an accident.

Cynthia, from an impatience of being alone, natural to people of her stamp, and from the unlucky circumstance of such people's never finding any body to keep them company, had taken that inordinate love to every place where two or three people might be found together, that she had not let the morning service of the church escape her. The wife of the noble Altamont was not more constant at her public devotions at Bath, or the famous mistress of the lank Sir Feather in town, than the charming Cynthia was at hers, which she paid in an obscure chapel, among old women and tatter'd mendicants, at about a mile distance from her own house.

Loveill, who to do him justice, has as worthy notions of religion as any man, had been often scandalized at the prostitution



tion of it on this flagrant occasion ; and had try'd many ways to reason or to banter her out of either the use or the abuse of it, but in vain. Cynthia never wanted arguments for doing what she liked. She convinced her lover, that more frequent sins requir'd more frequent repentance. She engaged to teach him, whom she thought at least as little truly religious as herself, that there was more pleasure in reading the bible, than in playing at whist on a Sunday ; but in the course of the arguments her cunning antagonist unluckily proved, that reading the bible for the sake of the fine stories in it, or going to church without any thought of profiting by it, had not a whit more religion or devotion in them, than the eating ones breakfast at leisure, instead of scaling ones chops with the chocolate, or the engaging ones thoughts about the figures on square pieces of paper, instead of meditating conquests of another kind.

When people have not a mind to be convinced, there is no great use of argument. The lady, to shew how perfectly satisfied she was with her own reasons, went to church more regularly than ever. This was one of the two ends Loveill had proposed in his arguing the case with her ; and the other he was not less successful in : he perswaded the duenna, whose conscience

was

was not in a vastly better condition than her lady's, that it was wrong to do what he saw she had no great stomach to; and added, that there was no need of her attendance at a place where no body came, that cou'd be suspected of an intrigue; and that, by trusting Cynthia by herself on these occasions, they should have at least two hours a day free to themselves, which, as matters went at present, he observed was more than they had in a fortnight.

Whatever effect the former arguments might have with this lady, this last answered perfectly to his wishes: the ready duenna seiz'd the opportunity, and had the head-ach the very next morning. The charity of her lover engaged him to stay and comfort her; and the charming Cynthia, from this time, found the way of going to church by herself.

The two or three first days of this new scheme gave so many opportunities of courtship, that the lady was infinitely happy in it, and the lover heartily tir'd of it. On the fourth morning he was missing, and again on the fifth. Miss Sulky grew outrageous, when she found she had lost her lover, by the means she thought the surest of all others to secure him. She began now to suspect, that Cynthia was the real object of his vows: and her eyes were

no sooner opened to this secret, than every circumstance concurred to convince her of the truth of it. She smothered her resentment; met her lover, when he came at dinner-time, with the usual kindness and familiarity, and gave not the least suspicion of her jealousy during the remainder of the day. The night was spent in contriving in what manner to watch her suspected lover: many schemes were thought of and all rejected. At length it occurred too plainly to her, that to watch Cynthia would be much the same thing, and would be sufficiently easy.

In the direct road, from Cynthia's house to the chapel she frequented, there lived a young creature whom Loveill had set up in a milliner's shop, and of whom he used to buy his gloves and sword-knots. The history of this lady had nothing particular enough in it to give it a place in these memoirs; and the only use the lover now made of her, was the drinking himself sober with tea with her, after a debauch; or the complaining to her of the severity of a mistress, who held out too long against him. The enraged Miss Sulky, who had followed the coach to chapel without stopping, saw it stand at the door of this shop in its return. Her first business was to enquire in the neighbourhood, after the cha-

character of the mistress of the house ; and she no sooner heard the name of Loveill, as her principal friend, than in a rage of jealousy she flew to the door, entered without ceremony ; and seeing no body that she wanted in the lower part of the house, she ran up stairs, before any notice could be given of her arrival, and bounced against the dining-room door.

This lady did not want artifice in the discovering an intrigue : she had purchased a knowledge of this sort, at the expence of many a discovery of her own ; but she had now to do with one who had a little more of it than herself. Cynthia had heard the rustling of silks up stairs, and perceiving by the precipitancy of the motion that jealousy directed it, she had given herself up as betray'd ; but Loveill had foreseen the possibility of all this, and had guarded against it. He had fastened the door, and had before caused the bed to be covered with caps and ribbands, and two or three of the handsomer kind to be laid on a table, as if somebody had pick'd them out. Cynthia had no idea of the intent of all this preparation, till the fatal alarm was given at the door : she could not but then admire the ready dissimulation of her lover, who, tho' he knew very well who was there, gave her time  
to



284      The ADVENTURES of

to compose her looks, by saying in a very resolute voice, “ Mr. Ranter, I am very  
 “ serious with you: it is a lady of re-  
 “ putation and honour, whom you are  
 “ affronting in this manner; and I give  
 “ you notice that my sword is in my hand  
 “ before I open the door to you.” With the last word he unbolted the door, and let in the duenna.

She did not know well what to make of such a reception, at a place where she fancy'd it was impossible she should be expected, nor indeed had she a moment's time to deliberate upon the reality of Loveill's passion; for the instant she enter'd the room, Cynthia, who does not want address on these occasions, took the surest of all methods of throwing a veil over her confusion, by confessing it: she flew to her friend, clasp'd her in her arms, and told her, such an escape— such a drunken brute— well, if it had not been for Mr. Loveill.— These interrupted phrases gave her time to recollect herself enough to form a regular story of the occasion of her being there; which she did with so much art, and introduced the circumstance of Mr. Loveill's anger at her coming to the door, so naturally, that the resentment of her rival was thoroughly appeased; and so easily do we believe things

things to be as we would have them, that she congratulated Cynthia on her escape, and retained not the least tincture of her former suspicions.

They were talking of going home together in very good humour, when a supposed secret squeeze by the hand, which Cynthia gave her lover by way of congratulation for so marvellous an escape, being seen by Miss Sulky, set every thing again in an uproar : she grew desperate ; she charged Cynthia, in plain terms, with her crime ; and Loveill, in very severe ones, with his ingratitude. The young gentlewoman of the house was called up, and not being practis'd enough in wickedness, to answer with the ready ease of the lover and his lady, she innocently confessed, that no gentleman had followed them thither ; but that the lady had called to buy a ribband, and Mr. Loveill, hearing her voice, had come down stairs to speak to her. Death and destruction was now threatened to both parties by the enraged duenna, and Loveill, who, found no other way of pacifying her, dispatched Cynthia home by herself, promising to bring the lady thither, in a few minutes after her, in a better humour.

Cynthia

Cynthia was no sooner gone, than Love-ill fell upon the duenna's neck, and, with a profusion of pretended fondness, sooth'd the violence of her rage; and, upon her insisting on immediate marriage, as the only proof that he was sincere to her, he told her, he would grant it; but, continu'd he, with an amorous look, I shall not love to have you suspect me afterwards: you and I know enough of the world, to know there is a way of bringing things of this sort to the test; and if you don't give me leave to give you that convincing proof, that I have been innocent this morning, I won't believe you deserve the confidence I place in you. The lady, with an easy smile, told him, trifles were not to be disputed about in bargains of such consequence as that they were about to make; and Loveill afterwards, as they went home together, explained himself so far to her as to tell her, that promises upon compulsion were void in law, and much more so in equity; that the same inclination still subsisted in him to marry her that always had, but that the same reasons also still subsisted against it; that therefore they were just as near matrimony, as they were an hour before, and not an inch nearer it; and that, if she desired to add to her power  
over

over him, it must be by placing a more entire confidence in him.

## C H A P. XXIII.

*Miss Sulky determines the ruin of Loveill with Cynthia.—That gentleman meets Lady Bett at Ranelagh.—His company much displeased at his behaviour.*

LOVEILL, who had been sufficiently mortify'd during the course of this amour by the reserve he was compelled to act with towards an object that inspired him with sentiments of a very different kind, now threw off all restraint. It was evident to Miss Sulky, that she had been doubly abus'd in the adventure at the milliner's; and her pretended lover, heartily tir'd of dissimulation, readily gave into the discovery, and acknowledg'd the use he had made of her in the whole affair. Her first resolution of vengeance was, the writing to Mr. Nothing, and acquainting him with the whole matter; but the artful Loveill had guarded against that. He told her, she must now remember that he had secrets to disclose, as well as she; and advised her, that her  
losing



losing one offer might not occasion the losing the means of others, to be silent, since, if he should be provoked to an explanation with Mr. Nothing, the story of her finding them at the milliner's and remaining with them, might be so represented as to render her suspected in her post. He concluded with telling her, that tho' he thought her behaviour to him and that lady during the beginning of their acquaintance had deserved at least all the revenge he had taken of it; yet he was not angry enough, to think it deserved her ruin.

When a woman finds herself in a man's power, there is no wise step but to become as useful to him as she can, till an opportunity serves of breaking her fetters. The duenna, tho' she had not quite so much judgment as jealousy, yet had enough to let her see that this was her interest. She still gave into the publick talk of Loveill's courtship to her, and bore the most provoking scenes a woman who loved a man and saw him love another could endure, without once repining; waiting only for Mr. Nothing's coming to town, to take a proper moment to reveal every thing to him her own way, and had indeed no less matters in her head than

than the supplanting her mistress, and putting herself in her place.

She had form'd no expectations but from this gentleman's coming to town; but an accident gave her a relief from the most provoking state that ever woman was reduced to, much sooner than she had expected it.

Loveill had promised himself infinite joy, in the prosecuting an amour of so pleasurable a kind as that he was engaged in with Cynthia, without the pains or the very troublesome circumstances that had hitherto attended it. He triumph'd in the removal of all the difficulties that had been in his way; and knew so little of his own heart, as not to find that those difficulties were the very thing that had render'd it so uncommonly charming to him.

He grew tir'd of the delicacies he used to long so eagerly for a taste of, now they were continually spread before him; and his temper turning more to new intrigues than uninterrupted ones, he began to wish for some fresh occasion of exercising the talents he was so fond of himself for being possessed of.

An opportunity offer'd sooner than he expected: They were at Ranelagh together one evening when the delicate lady *Bett* had broke loose from her prison, the

arms of a despicable and despis'd lover, and straggled to the same place, with no other company than a good-natur'd female acquaintance. Loveill, whose character was rather that of a violent than a constant lover, was, in his usual way, struck at first sight with the charms of this new face; he view'd her attentively several times, as she passed by him, and consider'd her looks with so much care that he soon found the prevailing passions of her heart to be love and money. There was room to promise himself every thing from an attempt upon her, but the difficulty of excusing it to his company appeared unsurmountable. He would even have given it up for that night, had not at length a speaking glance from the lady's eyes as she passed close by him told him, that she saw his intent, and pity'd his want of courage to put it in practice.

This was meant as a triumph over him, not as an invitation; the lady who gave it, had known too much of the miseries of the life of a common prostitute, and of the happiness of that of a private one, ever to suffer the thought of a new amour to enter into her heart: prudence supplied the place of virtue in her, and her keeper had seen a thousand proofs of the truth of it, too evident to give him the least

least room for suspicion. Loveill, who always understood things in the most good-natured light, took the glance he had been favoured with in much the same sense, that Lord Foppington does Amanda's compliment in the play; he grew too warm for decency, and recollecting the difference between a new intrigue and an old one, he told Cyuthia, with a good deal of confusion, that he saw a lady there, a relation, whom he must needs speak to, and begged her pardon for a few moments.

Cynthia, who had seen too much of the preparation for this terrible scene, burst into tears on the disclosing of it; and only told him, she hoped she had not deserv'd to be made the sport of a rival, but that he would put her into her coach before he shewed the world his perfidy. Loveill was too well pleased with her absence, to argue any thing against it: he led her out with a thousand protestations of fidelity, banter'd her on the subject of her jealousy, and promised to sup with her. Cynthia, with a very honest sigh, told him, he need not.—And the duenna, out of all patience with this new instance of his perfidy, whisper'd the word villain so loud to him as he put  
O 2 her



her into the coach, that the footman heard it.

The ladies went off full of reproaches on his ingratitude, and the lover returned into the room, where he saw the lady who had occasioned all this mischief sitting with her companion over-against the musick. He sent the gentleman who sat next her on some fool's errand, in order to get his place; and no sooner had seated himself down in it, than he began to attack her in form.

Lady Bett had been us'd enough to addresses of this sort; but the late successes of our hero had inspired him with such a confidence in his manner, that she sat mute with astonishment: at length giving a gentle pull to her companion, which was the signal for the disclosing her quality among strangers, that humble friend said with some sort of indignation, she wonder'd what the gentleman thought of *her ladyship*; and the lady getting up at that instant, told him, she found he had been mistaken in her, and turn'd upon her heel from him with great contempt. The lover modestly told her, as she went off, that he would be d——n'd if he had; and turning his head another way, whistled a piece of a tune, and took no farther notice of her.

She

She was no sooner out of sight than Loveill took out his purse, and laying it down upon the place where she had just sat, seemed to mind nothing but the musick. Seats so well situated as these seldom remain long empty, the first person who came to sit down in this was a sober city gentlewoman, who, no sooner perceived something hard under her, than feeling what it was, she was very slyly slipping it into her pocket.

Loveill stopp'd her in the action, and told her that he was sensible she had taken up a purse, and that he must inform her it belonged to a lady of his acquaintance who had just before sat there, and whom he would bring to her to demand it. The lady who had found it, very prudently answered, Sir, the person to whom it belongs, will be able to tell me what it contains; and, whoever does so, shall have it.

Loveill, whose plot succeeded thus far exactly as he had intended, now set a waiter to watch the lady who had picked up the purse, that she did not remove from the place before he returned, and went up to the fair tyrant he had just been talking to. "Madam, said he, it  
" is very evident to you what I have lost  
" while I sat by you, tho' you don't seem

“ in a humour to make any use of your  
 “ conquest ; but can you tell me, what you  
 “ lost yourself, while you sat there.”—The  
 lady answered him very pertly, “ Sir, not the  
 “ sort of trifle that you pretend to have  
 “ dropp’d there, I assure you.”—But, re-  
 collecting herself, “ my watch (continues  
 “ she) I hope is safe” — “ It is, Madam,  
 “ reply’d the lover ; but you have left be-  
 “ hind you a purse with ten moidores and  
 “ about twenty guineas in it : I have found  
 “ the person who has picked it up, and if  
 “ you’ll give me leave to conduct you to  
 “ her, she is ready to deliver it back to  
 “ you, on your giving an account of the  
 “ sum that is in it.”

Lady *Bett* was immediately in the scheme—she had known enough of the world to see that this was only the civilest way that ever was invented of giving her about forty pounds for an hour or two of her company ; and she could not find in her heart to be angry about it. It was very plain to her, that if the purse had been any body’s but his own, it was impossible he should have known what was contained in it ; and telling him, with an artful look, that he was the strangest fellow she had ever met with, she desired him to conduct her to the lady.

As they went towards her, Loveill took care to refresh his mistress’s memory as to  
 the

the sum in the purse, by telling her, he begg'd her pardon very heartily for meddling in her affairs; but that he thought ten moidores and twenty guineas too much to be thrown away. Lady *Bett* went up to the person who had it, and giving in this account of what it contained, the person who had picked it up examining it before the company, and finding her description of the pieces right, no body doubted but that she was the proper owner of it, and it was accordingly delivered to her.

Lady *Bett* was not a little pleased with the address of her new lover, and though she very steadfastly determined indeed having nothing to do with him in earnest, she could not deny herself the pleasure of bantering a little with him for the evening. She told him, "Sir, I don't  
 " know what return to offer a gentleman  
 " for an obligation like this, which you  
 " have laid me under: I can only tell  
 " you, that *I perfectly understand its na-*  
 " *ture*, and shall laugh at the remem-  
 " brance of it as long as I live." Love-  
 ill answered her with great civility, that she would be pleased to remember it was always possible to be mistaken; but that as she seemed to ask him what return he expected for the good luck of helping her



296      The ADVENTURES of

to her lost treasure, he only should presume to desire she would give him leave to continue in her company till one of them was tir'd of it.

The spirit of this request pleased her infinitely, she granted it with a court'sy, and told him, that to keep off the fatal moment that was to put a period to their acquaintance half an hour longer than it would naturally come, she insisted upon giving him a supper out of what he had recover'd for her. Loveill told her, that was a pleasure not to be refus'd, whatever were the conditions; and immediately led them into the best box in the room, and ordered the best supper that could be provided there.

The lady was not pleased with this idle sort of extravagance, but she easily understood that she had no right to meddle in his spending his own money, nor could with any face of politeness quarrel with the expence of a supper which she had offer'd to pay for, though she knew very well it was out of his purse. They began to grow intimate in a few minutes, and in a few more familiar; they drank success to each other's amours, and Loveill took all the liberties the lady would give him leave to take in the pushing his fortune with her. Nothing stood in the way

way of the most joyous scene in the world but the third person, who was in company with them. Loveill had been plagu'd sufficiently with one duenna, to make him hate the whole race of them; he was eternally upon his guard about her, and often check'd himself in the midst of his wildest sallies, on recollection that she was at his elbow.

Lady Bett perceived the restraint he laid himself under, and laugh'd at him for thinking it necessary: she explain'd herself to him so far as to tell him that this lady was her friend, not her guard; and that as her own innocence would always preserve her from being in the power of a third person; there was no need of that sort of caution that seem'd necessary before the watchful lady who had attended him in the scene of courtship she had seen him an hour before engaged in.

The malice of this observation, though very cunningly couch'd under obscure terms, nettled Loveill a good deal; but the lady saw that it did not do much toward clearing up the present point: "Come, come, says she very gallantly, to shew you, Sir, how little I fear either from her or you, I'll prevail with her to take a turn in the garden till it is your pleasure to call her in again. I know,

O 5

" my

“ my dear Lucy, continu’d she, addressing  
 “ herself to her companion, that I may tax  
 “ your good nature thus high, because you  
 “ know I would do as much as this for you.”

Loveill did not well know what to make of this : the company were all gone, and no body but the waiter who attended them could be a witness to what passed between them : he could not understand whether the lady meant this as a bravado or a challenge, but according to his determined rule of explaining all ambiguities, where there was a lady in the case, he gave the waiter the signal to get out of the way, and told the lady she was the gallantest woman he had met with these seven years.

Lady Bett, who had no mind to play the fool farther than in appearance, called back their attendant, told him to stay in sight, and laugh’d the intended attempt of her new lover out of countenance.

Loveill grumbled out many severe things against her insensibility ; all which she return’d with a good-natur’d smile, and told him, that when he was convinced that the lady who attended her was not a spy upon her actions, she hoped he would consider that it was a cold night in the gardens. Loveill, who never miss’d a good-natur’d hint in his life, tho’ he has sometimes mistaken

taken things for such that were not intended so, immediately ordered the fellow to go after the lady in the garden, and in the same breath thank'd his companion for having more good nature about her than he began to suspect she had.

He was preparing for a very formidable attack, when she told the waiter a second time he need not go; and lifting up the shutter behind their seat called her friend in, and after a thousand apologies for sending her away, very frankly told her what use the modest gentleman had a mind to have made of her absence.

Loveill was enamour'd extremely with the wit and spirit of the lady he had pick'd up, but he was extremely puzzled about what to make of her. Sometimes he believed her a woman of fashion, who had a mind to entertain herself with an innocent wild frolick; and sometimes for an artful whore, who had a mind to him for an acquaintance when she knew him a little better, but who was too cunning to venture any great liberties with a stranger. Her behaviour to the lady who attended her, added not a little to his confusion; for sometimes she spoke to her as an inferior, and at others in so polite a manner, as seem'd to put the freedom she treated



## 300      The ADVENTURES of

her with on no other footing than that of a particular intimacy between equals.

It is no wonder indeed that Loveill was bewildered in his guesses on this occasion; for the lady not only had determined to puzzle him as much as she possibly could, but she really did not yet know what was her own mind about him. All that he could look upon as certain in the affair was, that she was accountable to no body, since she had seemed not at all upon her guard as to the censure of the people who were about her, and was now abroad at a time of night when every body, who are under command, are at home.

The hours had pass'd away so jovially, that the coachman who took it for granted they intended to stay all night, had sent in his request to be discharged; and was the first person who put them in mind what time of night it was. They got into the coach after the gallant Mr. Loveill, whose face was sufficiently known in the place to give him credit for a supper, had first prevented the lady from paying the reckoning, and then told the waiter he had no money about him.

Lady Bett was no sooner seated in the coach, than she recollected that she had taken the gentleman from the party he came with, and desired to know where she

she should set him down. Loveill told her, he hoped she remember'd the promise under which their acquaintance commenc'd; and added, that unless the condition was broke thro' on her part, there was no doing any thing but carrying him home with her. The lady who was with them stopp'd any explanation on this subject for the present, and told them, that as they both (she suppos'd) liv'd in London, there was at least half an hour left to consider upon it.

Loveill was in no humour to part with his new acquaintance; but he was in a deal of perplexity how she would determine on that subject. He often press'd the going home with them; which his mistress very obstinately refus'd, tho' she acknowledg'd she did not know how to be honourably off of it, as she was determin'd not to lye about the matter. At length, after much whispering between the ladies, the companion told him, that her friend not being able to say she was tir'd of him, had determin'd as he requested it of her to carry him home: but added she, remember this is your own seeking, and blame no body for the consequences: you gentlemen have more supple consciences than we have; ten to one but you are off now in honour, only your civility wont let you say so—and if not,

†

we

we know you can pretend to be so.—If you will, we'll promise you to believe it is a pretence, and upon honour will see you again to-morrow.

Loveill insisted upon his bargain; and the coachman was order'd to go to the place where he took up. The lover began now to believe his intrigue would come to something; and was not a little surpriz'd at the lady's opening the new scene by giving him back his purse, telling him she had seen very plainly thro' the artifice at first, but that she thought he deserved to be indulged in it; and frankly confessing she liked him well enough to wish for a farther acquaintance.

The transported gallant thank'd her with a thousand kisses, and was congratulating himself on his being the very happiest man in the world; when peeping out to see where about he was, he perceived they had got into a dirty ruinous street, where probably no coach had been before of seven years: he began to be a little alarm'd at the oddity of the place, but he had too much mind to keep well with the lady to say any thing about it; he only continu'd making fresh observations at every turn, and instead of the faint prospect there was of the coachman's having accidentally taken some bad way for the sake of a short cut,  
he

he had the mortification to find that every moment brought him into a still worse and worse place. At length, with a great deal of confusion he thrust his head out of the coach, and asked the fellow where he was; the coachman reply'd, *in Soho, please your honour*; and the companion added, yes, yes, he is very right.

Lady Bett, who had taken it into her head the whole evening to perplex and puzzle her new lover as much as possible, was not a little pleas'd with this new occasion of it, which she had not recollected till the uneasiness she saw him in, put her in mind of it. She encourag'd it to the utmost; she told him that gallant people like him, who made themselves the knight-errants of the age, would not be without adventures; and added, that she was sorry what he at present saw alarm'd him, for that much worse was yet to come; and that nothing gave her more pleasure than to think what would be his disappointment to find her, whom she perceiv'd he did the honour to take at present for a woman of fashion, lead him into a dog-hole, where he would expect nothing but to have his throat cut.

Every thing about them, as they went on, served to countenance this speech of the lady, they were in some danger of being



### 304 The ADVENTURES of

ing over-turn'd once or twice; but at length the coach stopp'd at the end of a ruinous gateway, where Loveill, who had now somewhat less stomach to his adventure than he had had before, ordered the fellow to wait for him, determining only to see the women to their door, and return.

If the places thro' which the coach had came, as it drew near the ladies home, had considerable alarm'd the lover, those thro' which they pursued their journey on foot, added not a little to his uneasiness; he had imagin'd they were to step out of the coach to the door of their house; but he found they had no less than five intricate alleys to go through first, none of them a yard wide, and some not high enough for him to stand upright in. The lady bantered his fears on this occasion, by begging his pardon for deceiving him, and promised to dismiss him as soon as they arrived at the door: Loveill was now perfectly convinced that he had taken all this pains about a common creature, who lodged in some garret, and who might have been had, if any body had chose to venture upon her, for half a crown. He began to suspect, that the giving him back his purse, which had appeared to him so great a mark of gallantry and generosity, had been in reality no other than a bait to draw him intirely

intirely into her power, and concluded, that more than that was to be taken from him before they parted.

In the midst of these contemplations they arrived at the door of a house, whose front view was that of a dead wall, built up as high as the garrets, and within five foot of it, and whose side prospects were two of these alleys. The lady knock'd at the door with great vehemence, and taking her lover by the hand, told him he should come in for a moment.

Loveill did not know how to refuse a lady any thing: tho' he gave himself up for lost, he went in with her: he had figured to himself before he entered a tattered bed, bare walls and broken chairs for his apartment and furniture; but what was his amazement a moment after on being led into a parlour, a large square room fitted up in the most expensive and elegant manner he had perhaps ever seen one.

The lady made him a curtsy, and told him she was very glad to see him at her house, and hoped she should often do so. His amazement was heighten'd on seeing her throw open a beaufet, magnificently furnished with plate, to give him a glass of burgundy; and on her woman's bringing her the box to put by her jewels, at seeing her pull off those she wore, and lay them

them up among many other very rich ones. The footman was ordered to set a table and glasses, and the lady told her lover, if he would sit half an hour, she should be glad of just so much of his company.

Loveill knew not how to contain his amazement at this new scene, and the lady who was still determined to keep up the spirit of her banter to the utmost, now treated him with so much freedom, that he took it for granted he was in for the night, and that in very good company.

They were extremely gay and in good humour with one another when the clock struck two; the signal that the half-hour the lady had allowed him was expir'd: she told him so, with a sigh that spoke the only truth she had said that evening, which was that she was sorry for it. The lover laughed at hours, and begged leave to send word to his lodgings that he should not lie at home: the lady look'd very grave upon him, and told him, "Sir, I find you mistake me still; I own I like you, you deserve it — But am I the only woman who ever lik'd you? or have you debauched every woman that ever did? I'll give you a quarter of an hour more, and that is the utmost I can allow you. I am very serious — and as you are a gentleman, I expect you to believe me."

Loveill

Loveill bantered her upon this almost out of humour, but not out of her purpose: he insisted on knowing what prevented his lying there, since, "Spite of your mock modesty, I know (continued he) you are willing I should." The lady reply'd, Sir, you press me very hard—I am not willing—but if I were, it were impracticable; I have a husband, whom I cannot, will not injure; and who, however little you may at present think it, will be here, before you have been gone a quarter of an hour.

The lady spoke this with an air of sincerity and resolution, that convinced the gallant she was in earnest. Here was a new scene opened to him, as inexplicable as all the rest: he was for taking his leave on the instant, but she told him she was secure of her husband's absence till three: that before that he must go in earnest; but that till then, he might entertain himself as freely as he pleas'd.

The lover understood the permission in a larger sense than the lady meant it. He took an opportunity of the gentlewoman's absence who was with them, to tell his mistress that she knew she was too handsome to escape, and that he knew she would have more prudence than to expose herself to her servants by crying out.

Lady



Lady Bett was in tears when her companion returned. She had thought so well of herself as to conclude she might venture any lengths, and get off, and the additional security of being in her own house, had appeared a double safeguard to her on this occasion. She was scarce more angry at the accident, than at the having been outwitted into it. Her companion was entreating her for heaven's sake to compose herself before her husband came in; and Loveill was wondering what woman this could be, who was so much the virtuous creature in her inclination, with so much the whore in her appearance; as well as what husband this could be, who liv'd at once in all this splendor and obscurity; and who was so much dreaded by his wife, and yet so conveniently certain in his absence to such an hour; when they were all thrown into the utmost confusion, by a loud rap at the door.

Lady Bett was the first who stir'd: she started up with distraction in her looks; ran to the table where Loveill had laid down his sword, and gave it into his hand with these words: “ Sir, you know how  
 “ little you have deserved of me, but I  
 “ cannot see you perish foully. You will  
 “ now know that I have a husband — re-  
 “ member that you are this lady's ac-  
 “ quaintance

“quaintance not mine: — if any thing  
 “wrong happens in spite of this, remem-  
 “ber that I did not put that weapon in  
 “your hand for nothing.” Loveill was  
 now very sensible that the affair grew  
 serious. The lady had scarce finished  
 what she was saying, when he heard the  
 master of the house speaking very fur-  
 lily to the servant who opened the door,  
 and breaking the head of the chairman who  
 asked him six-pence more than his fare.

Loveill had no sooner heard the first  
 word utter’d, than the whole mystery of  
 every thing he had seen in the place was  
 explained to him, and his own danger set  
 in a sufficiently strong light.

He knew the voice to be that of the  
 famous Sir Gerrard Bett, and he knew  
 him so well, that he would very willingly  
 have been in any place in the world to be  
 out of that he was in at present.

## C H A P. XXIV.

*History of Sir Gerrard Bett.—Loveill  
 gets into a terrible scrape.*

**S**IR Gerrard, (the title which had given  
 that of ladyship to the heroine of this  
 story, who had been many years a kept  
 mistress

### 310 The ADVENTURES of

mistress to different people ; but whom that gentleman had a little before this accident, been induced by her good behaviour to marry) was a very good travelling name taken up by *Mr. Gerald Bett* a tall Irishman, very formidable in every coffee-house in town, and who with the qualifications of a good understanding, a robust figure, and a masterly skill in the sword, with real courage in the use of it, had concluded that nothing more was necessary toward the changing the condition of a footman, to that of a modern fine gentleman, but the coming over to England.

The success of many people of his acquaintance, originally in the same station of life with himself, who had embarked in the same sort of expedition, animated him to the attempt ; and in the year 1736, which was the twenty second of his age, he had made free with the beureau of the gentleman he served, during his absence somewhere on a friendly visit of a week, and was safely arrived in London, and dress'd in the character he intended to assume, by that time his master was alarm'd at the loss of his livery ; after which he also indolently delayed the proper measures, till much too late for any hope of recovery, he discovered the much heavier loss of his money.

Mr.

Mr. Bett's skill in the sword, was a quality much out of the way of a footman: but that tho' he had learnt it very thoroughly while his master was under his instructor in it, he had never once thought of making it of any use to him; but had set himself out on his first arrival among us, upon the common scheme of marrying a fortune. He was sensible that the name of the nation he was born in would make against him in this scheme, and he therefore sunk it in that of a distant part of Spain; whence no body else was likely ever to come to disprove his history of himself, or to dispute the modest title of Sir Gerrard that he set out with.

The sum that he brought over with him was not inconsiderable, he ventured fifty pounds of it upon cloaths; took lodgings of two guineas a week; and set up a handsome equipage which he hir'd at three guineas a week more. He had had the prudence prior to all this to skulk about the town incognito, and enquire at ale-houses after the women of fortune; and had been informed of one in a street near St. James's square, on whom he determined to make his first attempt: he lodg'd himself within two doors of her, and took all the methods in the world to get into her acquaintance, but alas without success.

He



### 312 The ADVENTURES of

He had spent a hundred pounds in this fruitless attempt, when recollecting that he was begging himself to no purpose, and that he had even now too little left to make a push with in a second scheme, he determined to stake all the rest on an adventure that should terminate in a shorter time; and getting into a well-known gaming-house under the piazza, he set his remaining sixty guineas at one stake, against a gentleman who he saw had a considerable sum before him. He won: the loser desired to double the bet, he consented, and won again: his antagonist desisted; and no body else being willing to venture so high with him, he went home with four times his former fortune.

This was too prosperous an event, to leave a man of Sir Gerrard's enterprising turn irresolute as to what course of life to follow: he determined upon play for his future business. The large bets a foreigner had made, were the subject of every body's conversation at the table, when he entered the room the next evening. The whisper immediately ran round the room that there was the man; and the famed Mr. Roulet who had come thither on the news of his success, the former evening, and who when he had attentively squinted over every line of his face, could see nothing  
in

in it to accuse of winning upon any other score than mere chance, determined to fleece him of his last night's spoils.

Roulet, who is the most practis'd gamester of the times, very deliberately took out a bank note from his pocket, and turning his head another way, held it out, and said, silver, fifty pound. Gold, fifty pound, replies the hoarse voice of our new knight: he won, and Roulet delivered him the bill. Nothing could equal the flow of spirits Sir Gerrard felt on this continuance of his good fortune. He offered the same large bet a great many times after, but no body accepted it. At length Roulet observ'd the table in the hands of a man whose good fortune he so well understood the source of, that he knew he might trust it; and he spoke again, silver fifty pound. Sir Gerard immediately answered, and he lost. This was the first draw-back upon our knight's good-fortune; and though he could win money with a great deal of good-humour, he was not very well pleased about the parting with it. Roulet saw he did not pay readily; and as he knew he could depend upon the hand, he nodded to him to go on.

At the next throw Roulet called out silver, a hundred pound. Sir Gerrard answered, and lost again. A third cast was

### 314 The ADVENTURES of

made, and the knight, determined to win all back, called out first, gold, two hundred pound. Roulet answered, and won again. The knight was out of patience, and determined to double his betts till he had won all back; but the prudent Roulet, recollecting that he had now won of him all that he knew he had, ordered the hand to stop till that gentleman and he settled.

If Sir Gerard cou'd not bring himself to pay fifty pound, much less cou'd he think of paying all that he had in the world. He insisted on playing on: Roulet refus'd: The company all gave it against him; and he had nothing for it but to bully. Roulet told him he was a scoundrel, and called him out. They went into the piazza, and before any body cou'd come up to them, Roulet was laid down, and Sir Gerrard had escaped up James-street.

The knight was extremely happy, after having lost all he had in the world, to find himself safe at home, and with more money in his pocket than he went out with. The death of Roulet was all he dreaded: He kept up about a week; when hearing he was out of danger, he thought himself the happiest man in the world, and appeared again.

The knight was now in the whole secret of play at once. He knew he cou'd not

not shew his face at that table again indeed, but he comforted himself that there were many more. He saw that he might soon make a fortune by the very method he had now fallen into; and that there was nothing more requir'd to it than to play high, pocket the money if he won, and fight, instead of paying if he lost. In this scheme he visited all the whist clubs, hazard parties, and billiard tables in town, where people play'd high; and was one after another excluded from them all, with the civil names of rascal, gambler, and pick-pocket; but as he generally purchased those names and a good booty together, he was not discontented about it.

It will not appear wonderful, that a fellow who got money so fast and so easily, should spend it magnificently in his house; nor that a man, whom it was not proper any body should know where to find, should chuse to hide that magnificence in a place where he was certain no body would ever come to look for him. His house was so situated, that scarce a window from any other could see to the door of it: and as he never went out but in a chair, with the curtains drawn, he cou'd never be seen himself, so that the neighbourhood, who saw only women about, if they saw any body,



### 316 The ADVENTURES of

were made to understand that it was a private midwife's.

Sir Gerrard had for a week before the day of this adventure, been engaged in a private hazard club, that always met at nine o' clock, and regularly broke up at three in the morning. This had made Lady Bett so secure of him, that she knew she could keep her lover to a certain time; and that time she would by no means have suffered to elapse, but that the confusion Loveill's rudeness had thrown her into, had made her overlook it. The clock had unregarded given the signal of the knight's coming home, while the lady's companion was comforting her; and Sir Gerard, who had been in a terrible run of luck that evening, and had lost immensely, (when the clock, according to the rules of the company, had forbid his playing any longer to regain it) was come to the door, mad with his ill luck, and revenging himself of every innocent thing about him, when the lover now first discovered whom the lady he had brought home belonged to.

### C H A P.

## C H A P. XXV.

*Sir Gerrard behaves oddly on meeting Loveill in his house.—That gentleman finds means to get safe off.*

LOVEILL could easily guess what he had to expect from a fellow who professed fighting as one of the arts of life; who he knew would no more regard cutting a man's throat than paring an apple; and who now was entering a room, where he was to find a stranger with his wife at so unseasonable an hour, and the whole house in a manifest confusion, and all this at a time when himself was in such a humour, that it was six to four he either hanged himself or did something to be hanged for, without any additional provocation.

Loveill, who from a very singular turn of mind, brought on by a strange series of vicissitudes of fortune, always acted upon principles before established, had recourse to two of these in this urgent catastrophe. He recollected that he had long since fixed it as an invariable rule, that *he who wants fear, wants nothing more for his defence in disputes upon equal terms*; and that in things of so serious a nature as quarrels that are to be determined by the sword, *when one par-*

## 318      The ADVENTURES of

*ty is not afraid, the other always is so.*  
On these he determined to regulate his conduct in the approaching scene. He had scarce had time to recollect himself thus far, when the knight, (whose passion heard at a distance had deterred Lady Bett from attempting to meet him in the hall, and break the matter to him, as she had first determined to do) entered the room, by forcing the lock off the door in opening it, with a violent kick of his foot.

Too much provocation, they say, sometimes makes men cool. His hand was up to have expressed his vengeance against a noble sconce which stood between the windows, when he saw his wife in more confusion than his passion had been used to throw her into; and a gay fellow whom he did not know in the room, talking familiarly to her companion, but with his sword half out of the scabbard, and seeming to pay no sort of regard to him. He let alone the meditated mischief; and throwing himself down on a chair so violently that he shook the room, he with a surly eye scanned over the faces of the three persons before him, and uttered his vengeance in all the violence of dumb shew, that a man cou'd have fallen into who had found his wife in the fact, and was afraid to explain himself about it. He  
kicked

kicked away the foot of the table, and down went the glasses at one crash; and Lady Bett very humbly begging to know what had put him out of temper, he threw his hat in her face, and dashed the remaining bottle against the fire.

Loveill, who wished for nothing more than to be gone, and thought he saw that the knight also would be very well pleased with his absence, told the lady he was talking to, that he was afraid he had staid too late, and that he intruded upon the family at an improper time;—that he was her very humble servant, and would tell her sister that he had left her very well.

The ease and seeming unconcern with which Loveill delivered the beginning of this short speech, had almost convinced the knight that there was nothing ill in his being there, and reduced his anger to the sole offence of any body being suffered to know where he lived; but unhappily our hero had proceeded beyond his commission in the word sister; and Sir Gerrard, whose suspicions were all kindled afresh by it, bad him sit down and explain himself before he went; for that the lady he had been speaking to, to his certain knowledge had no sister at all.



Loveill perfectly concealed his confusion. He told the knight that he would sit down with him with a great deal of pleasure: that he saw he was drunk, and would stay till he drank him sober again, if he would: and that as to the matter of that lady's sister, it was only a school-relationship: that the girls at boarding-schools frequently called one another by the names of mother, daughter, sister, and the like; and that the friendship between her and the lady he had named to her under that appellation had been such that they had retained the phrase ever since. The composed countenance with which our gallant pronounced this familiar and good-natured answer, quieted all again. Lady Bett could not indeed hide her terror and confusion; but she artfully threw it all on the fright his passion had put her into; and the husband at length became so well convinced of her innocence, that he called for a couple of bottles of claret, and sat down very good-naturedly to drink with his wife's friend's friend.

During this friendly intercourse, he often stedfastly examined Loveill's face, to see if he could discover guilt, fear, or confusion in it, but in vain. So excellent a master of dissimulation was our hero, that the eye of so interested as well as so cunning an observer,

server, cou'd make no discovery from it. A thousand times the knight try'd, by sitting, and by something like menaces, to make out what was his real business there; but Loveill exerted his artifice and evasion to the one, and his sword, which he still kept between his legs, and artfully play'd with on all occasions against the other, with such address, that the knight found upon the whole he could make nothing of it.

About five the ladies left them very good friends over a third bottle, and retired to bed; and about seven the lover took his leave of the husband, invited him to visit him at a wrong place, and went home, perfectly well satisfied with his own conduct, which had brought him off from one of the terriblest scrapes man was ever engaged in; and that in a place where if he had been murdered, no body could ever have known how to enquire after him.

## C H A P. XXVI.

*Loveill makes up a breach with Cynthia.—Mr. Nothing arrives in town.—A plot upon him succeeds to admiration.*

IT was evening before Loveill could prevail with himself to get up, after the debauch and terror of the preceding night's adventure. He had never once remember'd Cynthia or her duenna during the scene he had been engaged in; but his thoughts were no sooner at liberty from the variety of things that had employ'd them in this intrigue, than he recollected that those ladies had a great deal of right to them.

He was glad of the spirit with which Cynthia had resented his joining Lady Bett, as her going away upon it had prevented her seeing a scene he could by no means have wished her to have been present at; but he now remembered that he should have a terrible quarrel to make up with her, and this with very slender materials for his defence. He got up about six, but by that time he had drank his chocolate and got his cloathes on, he found it was too late to visit them at home, and that

the only prospect of finding them was at the place where he had affronted them the evening before.

He made the best haste he could to Ranelagh, and was scarce enter'd the door when he saw them at some distance, and made out that Cynthia's eyes which had been quicker than his had seen him first, and that she had turn'd out of the way to avoid him. Loveill had been engaged in too many quarrels with the ladies, to be disheartned at this distant signal of her anger. He made up to them, turn'd with the disdainful Cynthia who turned from him, and would let no artifice keep her eyes off him. When she saw it was in vain to attempt evading an eclairsissement, she stood still, and with a mixture of aversion and contempt in her face, seem'd to wait what he had to say for himself.

Loveill, who always affects to be the gayest creature in the world when he knows it is to no purpose to be serious, look'd her stedfastly in the face for some time, in silence; and then, seizing her hand which she did not care to make a struggle about disengaging from him in that place, he told her with a half smile that spoke at once all the pleasure and surprise human nature is capable of, "Let me perish, but you'll make me believe

" I



“ I am of consequence enough to you to  
 “ be uneasy about.” The lady answer’d  
 with a sigh, and turn’d away from him :  
 he pursued her close, and laugh’d, compli-  
 mented, courted, and endeavour’d to ban-  
 ter her out of a jealousy, which he told  
 her he was very happy to find she was  
 capable of; but which was certainly at  
 present the most idly founded that ever  
 that passion was.

After an hour’s raillery of this kind, in  
 which the lover had every syllable of the  
 discourse to himself, the lady turned about  
 to him, and with a severity in her look,  
 and a steadiness of countenance which he  
 did not think any woman was capable of,  
 said, “ Mr. Loveill, I did not think to  
 “ have condescended to an explanation  
 “ with you; but I see you are no more  
 “ to be discountenanced by contempt,  
 “ than engaged to constancy by affection.  
 “ It is long, very long since I have before  
 “ been guilty of the folly of engaging in  
 “ an acquaintance of this nature; and, I  
 “ thank you for giving me a warning  
 “ that never can be forgot, against my  
 “ ever doing it again. You know there  
 “ can be no love, where there can be no  
 “ esteem; and, that passions of this kind  
 “ are nothing, where they are not mutual.  
 “ Be it sufficient, that I know you to be  
 “ base

“ base, ungenerous, and a — ; but I  
 “ need not say more—and that as nothing  
 “ can restore you to the place you once  
 “ possessed, tho’ very unworthily in my  
 “ good opinion, nothing can make my  
 “ acquaintance worth your accepting, even  
 “ tho’ I were as earnest to continue it, as  
 “ from my soul I am to break it.”

Any body but Loveill would have been finally dismiss’d by this reproof ; but he who never consulted any body’s inclinations in his amours but his own, did not chuse to give it up so. He found that, as to his last night’s acquaintance, however well he lik’d her, it was not prudent to solicit any farther familiarity with her, as matters stood at present ; and he had indeed so settled an esteem for Cynthia, that it was a doubt whether he would at this time have given her up on cool thought, for any other woman in the world. When accusations cannot be answered, the next thing is to evade them. Loveill, instead of entering into the matter of Cynthia’s declaration, admir’d and complimented the sense and spirit with which she had conducted it ; and told her, she had given him a very dangerous pleasure in this proof of her esteem for him, since there requir’d more philosophy than he was afraid he was possessed of, to keep the man from becoming

becoming a coxcomb, who was sensible he was not indifferent to a person of such judgment. He persisted two hours in his new attack against all the opposition that pride, resentment and disdain, supported by the most solemn resolution ever taken by an angry woman, could make to it: he seconded compliments with protestations, and protestations with compliments; and at length, summing up his whole merit toward the ladies in his being incapable of dissimulation, he told Cynthia, that she saw it was impossible for him to hide his faults, if he had any; and at last, at the price of sacrificing his new mistress to the enraged rival, and engaging himself under the most solemn imprecations never to speak to her more, he obtained his pardon till he was caught tripping again, and the lady took him back in her coach, to sup with her.

The renewed acquaintance had not subsisted long, when Mr. Nothing very unexpectedly arrived from his country expedition. He luckily came home at a time of day when Loveill was in bed at his lodgings, which was the only chance he had not to meet with him at his own house; and, in fine, he found his Cynthia full of joy to see him, and his family in very good order.

The

The first civilities were hardly over, when he began to enquire after Mr. Loveill, concerning whom Miss Sulky had written ; and whom he had sent a letter to, tho', as he observed, he had received no answer to it. This was not a neglect of Loveill, as they all naturally suppos'd ; it was a masterpiece of cunning in him, and was the first step to an intended scheme of no little consequence. Miss Sulky, when she had been pert (for her education had given her no idea of good manners) had received from Mr. Loveill many threatenings, which she did not understand ; and Cynthia, when she had often found occasion to upbraid him with his indifference and infidelity, had been answer'd with many obscure hints of gratitude being more in our power than our passions ; and of the use people of sense might, and ought to make of fools. She had never been able to penetrate farther into the mystery of these apothegmatick declarations, than to know that Loveill had something in his thoughts in her favour, tho' she could not make the least guess as to what it was.

The time now approach'd for the clearing up this grand mystery. Mr. Nothing had heard so good a report of Miss Sulky's lover, that he immediately sent him an account of his being in town, and an invitation



tation to dine with him. There does not require a great deal of sense in a man to find out that another has some: Mr. Nothing grew fond of Loveill: he engaged him to spend the greatest part of every day there; and gave him an opportunity of now thoroughly tiring himself with what he was but half-tired of before. Love is the least lasting of almost any of our passions; when the relish for the pleasures of the house pall'd upon Loveill's palate, the conversation of the master of it grew insupportable. There is but one price at which a wise man can be brought to keep company with a fool: this was now no more in the present circumstance: but our hero, tho' he ceased to be the gallant, did not forget the pleasure he had enjoy'd in being so, nor the obligations he had to the person who had given him it. From the most passionate lover in the world he became the most sincere friend; and he could now admit of no delay in the proof of his being so. He had hitherto evaded coming to an explanation on the subject of the letter he had received from Mr. Nothing while in the country, but he now press'd the subject of it as the readiest means of all his intended friendship to Cynthia. Mr. Nothing had all along perceived that he did not chuse to talk about that matter; and tho' he had

made broad hints toward the coming to an explanation about it in the first days of their acquaintance, he had afterwards as cautiously avoided it as the lover, or as if he foresaw something that would be fatal to their friendship in it.

Loveill found great difficulty in bringing him now to enter upon it; but to make all things as agreeable as he could when he did mention it, he told him, "Sir, the good  
 " account I received of you, while a stranger,  
 " made me determine to give you two  
 " thousand pounds down with my relation,  
 " which was twice as much as I would have  
 " given with her to any body else; but since  
 " I have had the pleasure to know you, I  
 " like you so much better, that I will give  
 " you six; and if you'll except of a part of  
 " my house, we have room enough, and  
 " you will give us the greatest pleasure in  
 " the world by living with us."

Loveill put on a very grave face at this proposal, and told the gentleman who made it to him, that he had the misfortune to find there had been a terrible mistake between them; and which he at length perceived was owing to the ambiguous term *relation*, by which he had chose to call the lady that they were in treaty about. "I am  
 " now sensible, Sir, continu'd he, that it is  
 " Miss Sulky you are offering to me: but  
 " alas!

### 330 The ADVENTURES of

" alas ! it is Cynthia that I am requesting of  
 " you. I love her, Sir, continu'd he, with  
 " the most tender passion ; but I can obtain  
 " no glimpse of hope from her, till you  
 " consent to it. I am confident that she is,  
 " notwithstanding the little slip she has  
 " made with you, the most virtuous of her  
 " sex, and had I the blood of all the Ho-  
 " ward's in my veins, and fifty times my  
 " present fortune in my pocket, I should  
 " think it an honour to marry her."

Mr. Nothing, who doated on Cynthia  
 with all that excess of passion that people  
 usually have for things they can make no  
 use of, was struck speechless at the decla-  
 ration of Mr. Loveill, that it was her that  
 he aimed at : he had not recovered strength  
 to utter a syllable till the conclusion of the  
 period, when he got up in a violent rage,  
 and without at all entering into the merits  
 of the cause, forbid the lover his house.

Loveill was no sooner gone, than he  
 locked himself up in his closet, and began  
 to reflect on the attempt that was made  
 against him. The words *virtue*, *marry*,  
 and *honour* ran strangely in his head, and  
 were taking the effect apace that the art-  
 ful speaker of them had intended they  
 should, when that master of stratagem  
 seized upon the occasion of the confusion  
 he knew the old fellow must be in ; and  
 taking

taking in to his assistance another very strong agent, no less than the unquestionable cowardise of a rich and doating lover, who had already what he wanted in his possession, he doubted not but he had brought his whole scheme into execution. He went into the first coffee-house he saw on his coming out of Mr. Nothing's doors, and calling for pen, ink, and paper, wrote the following billet :

S I R,

*I Can forgive you the ill-treatment I received in your house, because I am sensible how much I should have been provok'd myself on the same occasion; but I cannot think you have any right to deprive me of what you have yourself no legal title to. I am going into Hyde-Park, where I should be glad to speak with you on this subject; and am,*

S I R,

Yours, &c.

LOVEILL.

Mr. Nothing's blood ran cold in his veins as he read this letter: he ordered the messenger to stay while he considered upon it; and after a quarter of an hour's deliberation, sent Loveill word that he could  
not



not wait on him that afternoon, but that he should be sure to hear from him the next day. Loveill guess'd so well at the event of his scheme, that he was not surpriz'd at being wak'd the following morning about ten to receive a card, which a special messenger had been ordered to deliver into his own hands, or on reading in it, "That Mr. and Mrs. Nothing sent their compliments to—— Loveill Esq; and should be glad of his company to breakfast."

He congratulated himself heartily on the success of so honest a plot as this had been; and immediately waited on them. Mr. Nothing received him in a very friendly manner, and told him, that tho' he was for quarrelling with him about his mistress, he hop'd he would not dispute his wife with him, calling out as a witness of the truth of what he said, the clergyman who had just done the kind office, and telling Loveill that he had so good an opinion both of him and of his lady, that if he chose to continue his visits, he should always be glad to see him.

Cynthia needed not to be told that this was Loveill's doing, or that it was the act of friendship he had so long promised her; nor the duenna that her office was now expir'd, and that if she hop'd for future  
favour

favour from Cynthia, it must be by submission and respect, not by the insolence and severity she had been us'd to preserve it under. Every body, except that lady, was happy about it, and the good understanding of the family continued five months, at the end of which time, it pleased heaven to call Mr. Nothing out of this bustling world, and to leave the lady a handsome widow, with near eighty thousand pound.

*The End of the First Volume.*

